



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>









THE
WITCH,
AND
THE MAID OF HONOUR.

— Tales
Of woeful ages, long ago betid. SHAKESPEARE.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR THE AUTHOR;

AND SOLD BY T. N. LONGMAN AND O. REES,
PATERNOSTER-ROW.

1799.

243. v. 271.





TO THE
MAIDS OF HONOUR.

LADIES,

THE writer of the following trifle requests the honour of presenting to you the History of a Lady who formerly held the same exalted situation that you hold now. Permit Isabella Markham to solicit your patronage for the Author, who has the honour of being,

With great respect,

Your obedient humble Servant,

THE OLD WOMAN.

May 1, 1799.



P R E F A C E.

PRAY, Sir, in all the reading which you have ever read, did you ever read such a book, as *Locke's Essay upon the Human Understanding*? — Don't answer me rashly; because many, I know, quote the book who have not read it; and many have read it who understand it not. If either of these be your case, as I write to instruct, I will tell you in three words what the book is: it is a History.—“ A
“ History! of who? what? where?
“ when?”—Don't hurry yourself; it is a history book, Sir, (which may possibly recommend it to the world,) of what passes in a man's own mind; and if you will say so much of the book, and no more, believe me, you will cut no contemptible figure in a metaphysical circle.—But this by the way.

Now

Now if you will venture to go along with me, and look down into the bottom of this matter, it will be found that the cause of obscurity and confusion in the mind of man is threefold.

Dull organs, Dear Sir, in the first place: secondly, slight and transient impressions, made by the objects when the said organs are not dull; and, thirdly, a memory like unto a sieve, not able to retain what it has received.

STOLEN.

THE

THE WITCH,
AND
THE MAID OF HONOUR.

LORD HARRINGTON, of EXTON, a remarkably handsome man, with good sense and sound morals, possessed all the accomplishments of a gentleman; he had ready wit, and was one of the brightest ornaments of the court of Elizabeth.

This nobleman was desperately in love with Isabella Markham, one of her majesty's maids of honour. My lord sighed and made verses; the lady was very reserved; and the queen kept a strict eye upon them; for, as she preferred

a life of celibacy herself, she was not pleased when those about her entered the marriage state. This affair was therefore carried on slowly ; and the queen growing old and daily declining, her great mind and good disposition lost their powers : the first degenerated into weakness, and the latter into fretfulness ; so much so indeed, that those of her attendants who had been accustomed to her former state, could ill bear the change.

Isabella Markham, being a favourite, felt those effects much more severely than the other ladies. Some have said, that these fine feelings proceeded from seeing her royal mistress so lost from what she was before ; others, that the queen's lectures always turned upon the inconveniences, the troubles, the miseries of the married state, frequently
glancing

glancing at the passion of lord Harrington for the fair maid of honour; and after these conversations, she thought the queen more pettish than usual; or, as others will have it, the fair lady found her royal mistress's remarks more disagreeable. Whether it was one, the other, or both, is not certain; but certain it is, that the queen and the maid of honour were not so fond of each other's society as formerly.

Time however, which accomplishes all things, released this great queen from the troubles of this transitory life, after a long and glorious reign; and I believe that her subjects of all descriptions will ever revere her memory, and acknowledge that she possessed the happy art of governing with dignity to herself and happiness to them.

After a proper time had elapsed, the happy lord Harrington called Isabella Markham his wife. The new king was gracious; but how different was the court of James from that of Elizabeth! all elegance, all dignity, was flown with the mistress of England. The king was a pedant, fond of the wrangling of the schools, extremely superstitious and ill bred, spoke the English language imperfectly, and was the opposite of Elizabeth in every respect.

Lady Harrington sighed at the change: having for some years been accustomed to converse with Leicester, the Cecils, Essex, sir Philip Sidney, sir Fulke Greville, and other stars which shone at the English court, she found the conversation of the present courtiers extremely gross and offensive; but the Harringtons' fortunes not being large, and their family increasing,
they

they were resolved to stay in London, if possible, to better them. The king acknowledged them to be clever, polite, and good people : for the latter he liked them ; but as for the former qualities, they were disregarded : in short, not having any thing of the kind himself, he thought them useless accomplishments.

After a marriage of seven years, my lord and lady found themselves only company for each other. The manners of the court were entirely changed ; all that gallantry and high spirit which so eminently distinguished the reign of Elizabeth was fled ; all the courage and heroism which gave grace to the youth of her time, were lost in the spiritless James ; not a ray of glory ever illuminated his heart ; his head was full of polemical fancies ; and his conversation

abounded with indelicacies, which he uttered as well as he could to the laughing courtiers.

Lady Harrington never went to court ; it was no place for women ; my lord, but seldom. Time passed on, and their four children grew rapidly, when a distant relation of lady Harrington's died and left her a thousand pounds. Their situation was an uneasy one ; they therefore resolved to leave London, and reside at Coombe Abbey near Coventry, which was my lord's paternal estate. The abbey was in good repair ; and prudence suggested, that five hundred of the thousand would render it comfortable, and they might reside there with much less expence than in London, where they had been so much neglected. The town furniture added to that at the abbey would render it well furnished,
at

at least as well as reasonable, prudent people could wish. A governor was provided from Oxford for the sons, and was occasionally to instruct the daughters.

They left London with a sigh, her ladyship's much more sincere than my lord's, as the metropolis had been her residence for some years; a great part of her youth was passed there; and a retrospection of our juvenile days is ever accompanied with a melancholy pleasure. She could not divest herself of the idea of the court of Greenwich, where her royal mistress was born; nor could she recollect Nonfuch without regret. Those times, would she think, are past by as a fleeting cloud, never to return. Was I happy when they existed? No, not perfectly so; but my uneasiness proceeded from trifles; yet I recollect that those trifles were serious things

things to me then; and perhaps ten or fifteen years hence, what now agitates my mind may appear quite as trifling; and then fifteen years farther, in all probability, if it be possible for frail mortality to remember, I may consider every nation beneath the moon as a hive of bees or a colony of ants. Busy world, farewell, farewell! I go not from a court to a cloister; but from a great city to an abbey; to retirement in the country, where, perhaps, I may not find one soul congenial with my own. Ungrateful that I am, to forget the source whence all my cares and pleasures proceed! But oh, my friend! the friend of my youth, had I but you to comfort me in my retirement, your good sense and eternal cheerfulness would gild the walls of a cottage. But that is impossible; you must be flown to a happier region, or your friend
Isabella

Isabella would not so long have mourned your loss. Yet let me imitate your conduct when living; let me, while I recollect your virtues, endeavour to emulate them, and at the same time recall the natural courage of my heart and the fortitude of my mind to bear with patience and resignation every event which may happen.

The eldest son rode up, and observing that her horse did not travel with his usual spirit, inquired if he was well; for to flag at the beginning of a journey was a very bad symptom. "The fault is in myself, I believe," said his mother; "for I was attending to the fierceness of the weather, and therefore let the animal do just as he pleased; but I cast my eyes toward you, and thought you seemed to be lost in meditation."—"So I was," he replied; "and

“and what do you think my thoughts
“were employed about?” — “Your
“horse, probably, or the hounds we
“are to have at the Abbey; or making
“a new set of fishing tackle; though
“I should be much more gratified if
“your studies were the object of your
“thoughts.” — “None of those, my
“dear mother; I was thinking what
“prince Henry might be doing. You
“know he was ever gracious to me;
“my father thinks proper to live at
“Coombe Abbey; I dare say he is right
“in so doing; but I extremely regret
“leaving the prince. He seems so
“brave, and so good, that I could lay
“down my life for him; and if he were
“king, I am sure it would be better for
“England.” — “How should you know,
“Robert, what is best for England?
“The king is a man of peace, and a
“good man; and your darling prince
“Henry

“ Henry will, I hope, be king in time.
“ Come, spur your horse, and let us
“ join the rest.”

The family of lord Harrington consisted of four children. Robert, the eldest, was just turned of fifteen; and his father, as all fathers are apt to flatter themselves, thought him a youth of parts. John was fourteen, and had no characteristics but fun and mischief; Elizabeth twelve, and Matilda ten. There was nothing uncommon in these children; they were well shaped and healthy, and, as far as could be judged, had good sense; and if they were properly educated were likely to be elegant ladies and gentlemen, and useful members of society.

They travelled on by easy stages till the turrets of Coombe Abbey appeared in
B 6 view.

view. Lord Harrington's heart acknowledged the place of his birth with a melancholy pleasure. Happy hours of childhood, he thought, how oft have I climbed and looked out of that turret window! how oft have I exercised my horse in the *ménage*, or myself at ball in the park! how quick I ran to join the hawking or hunting train, and how slowly did I return to my preceptor, and my studies! Yet I have found more resources in the latter than youth would waste a thought upon; but youth must be restrained (looking at his children); yet should I have been so strong as I am, if I had wasted more time over the midnight lamp? No, it would not have been possible: I must therefore, from my own feelings and experience, endeavour at least to bring up my sons to be useful members of society; I will enure their bodies to fatigue by exercise, and their

minds by degrees to study ; I will regulate my own time, and I hope to succeed.

“ My lord,” said Elizabeth, “ is that
“ our house ? it seems to be very large.”
“ Yes,” he replied, “ that is the abbey,
“ the place where I was born, and where
“ I passed so many agreeable days in my
“ youth. But my father could not give
“ me a large fortune, and I was sent into
“ the world to endeavour to make one.
“ This house was my elder brother’s,
“ who lived many years after the death of
“ my father. You say it looks very
“ large, and it is so ; my brother lived
“ in a much more expensive style than
“ his fortune could bear, and died much
“ in debt. As an honest man I have
“ paid those debts, and hope to save
“ fortunes for you, my children, by
“ living prudently.”

“ It

“It looks dreadfully frowning and gloomy,” said Elizabeth.—“It is the character of this style of architecture; it would not appear so magnificent, if it were lighter; it formerly belonged to a society of nuns, and, if I mistake not, was first endowed by a Richard de Camville, four hundred years ago; but it has undergone many repairs and alterations since its foundation, and, gloomy as you now think it, has in all probability been much more so; four hundred years raise and destroy innumerable buildings.”

“Pray, my lord,” said lady Harrington, “how came it into your family?”
 “It was given,” replied my lord, “to an ancestor of mine by Edward the Fourth, for taking Henry the Sixth prisoner; and Henry the Eighth gave the Bath estate I now possess, which
 “ was

“ was church land, to my grandfather
“ when he married his natural daughter;
“ and your late royal mistress was my
“ godmother.”

They were now very near the Abbey; the hazy twilight shadowed every object, and threw false lights upon the beautiful Gothic architecture. My lady did not seem in spirits, probably fatigued by her journey; the boys were silent, and the girls seemed fearful of they knew not what; when after crossing two courts, a large hall, and a long kind of stone gallery, they arrived at a magnificent room, in which was a comfortable fire.

“ You are all welcome to the Abbey,”
said my lord, embracing them; “ and
“ I hope we shall live to spend many
“ cheerful days here; nay I will add
“ years.”

“years.” After some uninteresting conversation they retired to rest.

Mistress Bridget, the young ladies’ waiting-gentlewoman, attended; Bridget herself also was waited on by an old woman who had taken care of the Abbey for many years. “Why do you give that good woman the trouble of coming up with you, Bridget?”—“I could hardly *see*, I mean *find* my way, young lady.”—“But do not keep her here,” said miss Harrington; “she must be tired; I am sure I am, and shall soon be asleep. But where do you sleep, Bridget?”—“In the next room, young lady.”—“Then send this poor woman to rest,” said miss Harrington. “Indeed, my young lady, she is not tired; for you know the cooks, the housemaids, the pages, the butlers, and other servants, have been
“ here

“ here these two days, and have got
“ every thing in order; and this is
“ Goody Dickens, who has been a long
“ while in this place, knows every crick
“ and corner, and is wife to the under
“ gardener.”—“ Then her husband is
“ sitting up for her,” returned miss Har-
rington. “ Goody Dickens, go down;
“ Bridget has nothing to do but to go
“ to rest; do go.” The old woman
curtsied, but moved not. “ Indeed,
“ my dear young lady,” said Bridget,
trembling, “ I don’t know how she can
“ go; do let her sleep this one night
“ with me.”—“ What are you afraid
“ of?”—“ Oh the nuns,” she exclaim-
ed, “ the nuns!”—“ The nuns,” said
miss Harrington, “ have been all dead
“ these hundred years. Now, Bridget,
“ I have a great regard for you; but
“ if my mother were to know that you
“ mentioned any nonsense of this sort,
“ you

“ you would not remain an hour in the
“ house.”—“ But did not you tell me a
“ horrible story of a nun, Goody Dick-
“ ens ?” —“ No,” said the old woman ;
“ but I began to tell you a story that
“ was told me by my grandmother,
“ which I have heard many and many
“ a winter’s night ; and as you seemed
“ to be sleepy, Mrs. Bridget, I thought
“ it might divert you ; but it would take
“ a whole summer’s day to make an end
“ on’t.” —“ I would not hear it, if it
“ took but two minutes,” said miss
Harrington, “ I am so fatigued ; there-
“ fore, good Bridget, do take away the
“ candle ; for I believe my sister is
“ asleep.” Mrs. Bridget obeyed with
alacrity, and Goody Dickens went with
her.

The next morning, when the family
met at breakfast, mutual inquiries were
made

made how they had rested, which received satisfactory answers. The girls thought the place very dull, and the painted glasses very fine; the boys wanted a ramble in the park to look about them; and when breakfast was over my lord and lady were left by themselves. They remained some time silent, my lord thrown back in a chair, and my lady with one elbow upon the table, supporting her head with her hand. The occasion of this silence it would take some time to develop; my lord was a very clever man, and my lady as clever a woman; both were good people, and happy in each other; they had good sense, good education, and were well accomplished in all the elegant amusements of the times; but they were now thrown out of the path they had been used to pursue; and that, Courteous Reader, was a very serious affair for a
man

man of forty-five and a woman of forty ; it was, as it were, beginning life over again. Their present situation had not been considered sufficiently ; they had left London because it was disagreeable to them, without drawing any fixed plan for getting rid of time ; the heaviest of all things when you do not know which way to make use of it ; in short, at this moment they were both in a state of abstraction and indecision.

My lord, as has been observed, was a man of letters ; had been highly applauded for his skill at tournaments ; was a soldier when the country was threatened with invasion by the Armada ; and had been an excellent horseman and tennis player ; but his ardour for those exercises was abated, as was also the pleasure of writing verses upon the fair
Elostellas

Flostellas of his time ; and he sat in silent meditation.

Lady Harrington was well versed in sacred history, and in the history and geography of her own country ; had been taught by Isaac Oliver to draw, and was extremely fond of flowers ; had read a great deal, and was much employed that way by her royal mistress ; she could play too in a very good style upon the lute. How then did it happen that these good people could not set themselves about something ?

At length lady Harrington, yawning, and stretching her arms, said, " My dear lord, I wish I had before I left London purchased materials for working a bed."—" Do we want one, my dear ?" returned his lordship. " Yes," she replied ; " that in the fourth room is
" very

“ very shabby ; and the tapestry is so
“ fine, and in such very good condition,
“ that if we had a rich, handsome,
“ worked bed, and a dozen chairs of
“ the same pattern, it would, I think,
“ be the best furnished room in the
“ house.” — “ Do you think,” said my
lord, “ it would be better than the pur-
“ ple velvet with the gold fringe, which
“ king Henry gave to my grandfather ?”
— “ Oh by no means,” replied my
lady ; “ that bed I shall be extremely
“ careful of ;” and, rising, added, “ I
“ shall go and look at it directly.”

Going into the lobby, she bade the
page tell her woman to come to her, and
then, recollecting herself, she desired he
would send up Vincent the housekeeper.
She was consulting with her when she
saw her daughters coming towards her,
who said they wished to walk in the
garden,

garden, as the weather was so fine ; and Goody Dickens had told Bridget that it was quite a paradise. “ We know how fond you are of bowers and flowers,” said Matilda. “ Yes,” returned lady Harrington, “ I am a passionate admirer of those things ; but if you and Elizabeth could have an idea of Nonsuch, you would not, I am afraid, have a very magnificent one of goody Dickens’s paradise.”

It was now the middle of May ; the spring had been mild and favourable, and the air extremely soft and perfumed. They went through the great hall into a square court which led to the garden ; every thing seemed to smile ; the birds sung, and the first thing which caught their attention was an old man weeding a bed of tulips. He said, that his name was Simon Dickens ; but he was only under-

under-gardener ; that he had lived in the Abbey many years ; that his father had been head-gardener, but, unluckily for him, died when he was only fourteen years old ; that his mother had been dead twenty years, and himself had married the late lord's under-cook ; he had taken all the pains he could to do right, and hoped his honourable lordship and her honourable ladyship would continue him on ; for he was *forely* pleased to think he should see the fine old Abbey flourish as it did twenty years ago. Lady Harrington replied, that if she heard a good character of him, she hoped he would. A man now appeared at a distance. " That is *our* gardener, my lady," said Simon. " We want to see the garden," said her ladyship ; " pray show it us." The gardener made his best bow, and preceded them, cap in hand.

The

The garden, though upon a smaller scale, was ornamented with trellis-work, cabinets of verdure, straight walks embowered with trees, in the style of Non-such; and with flower-beds formed into cyphers. When this was pointed out to lady Harrington, she asked who ordered it. “*Nobody* ordered, please your ladyship,” returned the man; “for my late lord never troubled himself about these things. But when I first came here I heard that the queen thought this part the most pleasant, and sat herself down upon that old bench, which I have done all I could to keep together; but as the weather has almost demolished it, I made these flower-beds in the form of Q. E. as a memorandum.”—“It is very well,” said lady Harrington, “but if it had been E. R. I think it would have been better.” The gardener hoped her

ladyship did not dislike it, as he could make any letters her ladyship chose next year.—No, it would do very well, and she was much pleased to see the garden so well kept up. “My lord,” said he, “ordered, upon the death of his brother, to have every thing kept the same as before; and I have done every thing in my power to obey him.” He then shewed them the kitchen ground and orchard, which were in the same good order; when, desiring some flowers might be sent in, they made the gardener a present, and returned into the house.

Lady Harrington now, throwing herself into a chair, said, “I think, girls, we will turn gardeners.” Oh, they should like it of all things; but how should they get their knowledge? “Why from books; I do not suppose there
“are

“are any in the library; but if you
“remember, Elizabeth, I have a her-
“bal by Gerard, who I believe was a
“physician; and he treats of the cul-
“tivation of plants as well as preparing
“them for medicine. Our books are
“unpacking, and we shall have them
“to-morrow.”—“That is delightful,”
said Matilda; “for we can have trees
“planted by the water, which will pro-
“duce geese.”—“Nonsense,” returned
lady Harrington. “Indeed, madam,”
said Elizabeth, “we took the book out
“of the housekeeper’s room, when she
“had it in London to make medicines
“from, and, looking at the prints, we
“found a tree which bore geese, and
“Matilda read the account; and the
“geese are called barnacles, and they
“grow in Lancashire.”—“A strange
“account this,” replied lady Harring-
ton; “but if we can get trees to pro-
“duce

“duce fowls, Matilda, why, so much
“the better; let us now be quiet till
“dinner; for I observed the dial in the
“garden was past eleven when we left
“it, and my lord and your brothers will
“soon return.”

In half an hour my lord and his sons
came in, and dinner was served. “Well
“boys,” said lady Harrington, “how
“have you spent your time?”—“Very
“pleasantly, madam; for we found in
“the park the finest turf to exercise our
“horses upon that can well be imagined,
“and the cleverest spots to shoot at
“the target; there we saw twenty fine
“mares and as many colts; you will
“have plenty of palfreys, sisters; for
“there are several that will suit you
“exactly.”

“I am glad, young gentlemen,” said
Mr. Fairfax, their tutor, “that you like
“the

“ the Abbey; it certainly is a fine place, and I hope to-morrow we shall have a room to begin our studies in.” Robert looked grave, and John chagrined. “ Very justly observed,” said lord Harrington; “ your mother and myself will this evening appoint one for you. Are your books come, sir?” Mr. Fairfax answered in the affirmative, and added, that he had been employed in putting them in some order. The young people dispersed after dinner, and towards evening my lord, my lady, and Mr. Fairfax, went over the house; the rooms were magnificent, and the furniture suitable, but old fashioned; in the rooms were scattered some portraits of the family, and remarkable persons; the library was a beautiful room, and well furnished with the best books in Latin and English, down to the thirtieth year of Elizabeth; for the late lord was not

a bookish man. Adjoining the library was a very good room, partly furnished with shelves; this was allotted by my lord as a study for his sons, and orders were given to remove their books under Mr. Fairfax's directions.

Mr. Fairfax had taken his Master of Arts degree at Oxford, was about seven-and-twenty years of age; learned, grave, and saturnine; and perhaps one of the most improper men in the world to conciliate the love of young people. He was destitute of that cheerfulness so agreeable to youth; stern, pedantic, and self-conceited, he spoke little, read old authors much, and ate a great deal more; the two latter indeed seemed to be his only pleasures. He was not in orders, and was rather suspected to be partial to the new sects in government
and

and religion which were springing up in many parts of the kingdom.

Mr. Butler, the vicar of the parish, was his opposite in every respect. He was mild, cheerful, and accommodating, and charitable to the poor in his parish, whom he was ever ready to relieve. He read prayers at the Abbey on Wednesdays and Fridays; and the family from thence always attended him to the parish church on Sundays. He had a wife about his own age, and two daughters who were in their twenty-fifth and twenty-third years. Mrs. Butler, a very good woman, troubled herself little with the world out of her own house, and even there her occupations were not very extensive, her household consisting of only one female servant, and a boy. She was an excellent manager, and understood all culinary

matters as well as any woman for forty miles round the parsonage, as she frequently declared; and, though Mr. Butler's income was small, yet his table was as well furnished as those of his more opulent neighbours. He had already saved five hundred pounds for each of his daughters; had an estate of fifty pounds a-year, which he purchased with his wife's and his own fortune, upon which she was jointured; and, from the value of money at that time, his daughters would be very good fortunes. This brought them many admirers; but, somehow or other, none succeeded. The girls had an idea of marrying gentlemen. Mr. Butler's father had been a merchant in London, and had advanced money to the late lord Harrington, which was part of the present Mr. Butler's fortune. Mrs. Butler was a yeoman's daughter, who farmed his own estate, which was supposed
to

to be worth about a hundred pounds a-year. The Miss Butlers, therefore, considered themselves as gentlewomen, on account of their father's profession, added to Mrs. Butler's father having never been in trade. Mr. Butler certainly was a gentleman; his manners ever proved him to be such. Whether his wife or daughters were gentlewomen, must be left to the judgment of the candid perusers of this *elaborate* work.

The young ladies at the Abbey had during the day some private conversation upon what it could possibly be that put poor Bridget into such terror the preceding evening; and they were resolved to hear a little more about it. So when the waiting gentlewoman came as usual to dress them, Miss Matilda said, "Have you heard anything more of that horrible story which you men-

a 5.

"tioned.

“tioned last night?”—“Why I can’t
“say but I have,” replied Bridget;
“and, young lady, from what Goody
“Dickens told me to-day, it made my
“blood run chill in my veins, my hair
“stand on end, and my flesh creep upon
“my bones.”—“What was it about?”—
“About, young lady? all concerning
“the nun of this Abbey.”—“Was she
“murdered?” they both exclaimed at
“the same time. “Why no; from
“what Goody Dickens said, I could not
“make much out about murder; she
“says that her memory fails her, but
“that her husband knows all about it.
“Do, good ladies, let us go into the
“garden in the morning, and hear what
“Simon can tell us; for my lady will
“not, I dare say, be up very early, and
“we may sit comfortably and hear it.”—
“Do, sister,” said Matilda; “let us go
“to queen Elizabeth’s seat and hear
“it.”

himself till the patience of his auditors was almost exhausted, began as follows :

“ A long time ago, (it was in the
“ time of the Romans,) a gallant knight,
“ whose name was fir Fier d’Bras,
“ who lived somewhere in this neigh-
“ bourhood, valiantly mounted his
“ courser, girded on his sword, and
“ left all his family crying, and lament-
“ ing the loss of him. He rode up to
“ this Abbey, knocked at the postern
“ gate, and wanted to see the abbess,
“ who, some say, was his aunt, others
“ his niece, and others his sister ; but
“ which I can’t tell. Howsoever, she
“ was some how or other his kinf-
“ woman. This lady was one of the
“ best gentlewomen in the world, and
“ very charitable and good to the poor.
“ She gave the knight her benediction,
“ a string

“ a string of beads, and other gifts ;
“ with which he rode away very joyful,
“ and went to our king of England,
“ called Lion-hearted Richard, having
“ plucked out the heart of a lion with
“ his own hands. And sir Fier d’Bras
“ went beyond the sea with the king to
“ fight and overcome monsters, though
“ to what part of the world I do not
“ rightly know, but it was all among the
“ blacks.” (“ That must be bad enough
“ of all conscience,” said Bridget ; “ for
“ I once saw a picture of one at sir
“ Robert Naunton’s, and it quite over-
“ came me.”) “ But as I was saying,”
added Simon, “ they fought and
“ conquered the blacks, and then went to
“ overpower the Saracens ; and after
“ fighting them man to man, and horse
“ to horse, (for the Saracens are good
“ jockeys, as I have heard say,) sir Fier
“ d’Bras found himself just as it was
“ dark,

“dark, and in a parlous cold night, close
“by a wood’s side; and out of this wood
“came a horrible monster, the most
“horrible monster that ever was beheld
“before or since by mortal man.”—
“That must have been surely the devil,”
exclaimed Bridget. “No, a great deal
“worse,” said the old man.

At that moment they saw lady Harrington approaching, who said, “I am glad
“to see you such early risers. What,
“has Simon been telling you the history
“of my royal mistress’s visit to this
“spot? It will be a favourite seat of
“mine as well as yours, girls; and I
“hope we shall pass a great many plea-
“sant hours here. We can bring our
“work, our music, and our books;
“here we shall see the flowers of our
“own planting improve daily, and may
“indulge ourselves with the products
“of

“ of the autumn secure from its sultry
“ beams. Come, we will walk once
“ round the flower-garden, and then in
“ to breakfast.”

When they returned to the house, a servant informed them that the books were carried into the library. They, therefore, adjourned as soon as breakfast was over. “ Now, Matilda,” said lady Harrington, “ you may give the books
“ to Giles, and call over their titles, as
“ they are placed upon the shelves.” First,
“ madam, is the Bible and New Test-
“ tament,—the next Chaucer’s Poems,—
“ Gower’s Works,—Sir Thomas More’s
“ History,—Sir Philip Sidney’s Arcadia,
“ — Spenser’s Fairy Queen,— Shake-
“ spear’s Plays,—Daniel’s Poems,—Da-
“ vis’s Poems,—Doctor Donne’s Poems,
“ and about a dozen others, which have
“ no letters upon their backs.” — “ Well,”
said

said lady Harrington, "it will be good
" employment for Elizabeth to write the
" titles, and for you to paste them;
" another day; but where is our friend
" Gerard?"—"Here he is," said Eliza-
beth. "With his barnacle geese, I hope,"
answered Matilda. "You are so fond
" of the wonderful," replied lady Har-
rington, "that I know not what to do
" with you."—"Why, my dear ma-
" dam," said the young lady, "do you
" think anybody could make the story?
" Only look in this book, and you will
" find the print, where the geese are
" dropping from the tree into the
" water."—"It may be there," replied
her mother, "yet I have not faith
" enough in Mr. Gerard to believe
" it."—"But is it not very strange,"
said Elizabeth, "that so much pains
" should be taken about them? and
" there may be a great many curious
" things

“ things in the world, madam, which
“ are out of our way, and therefore, not
“ seeing them, we are apt not to be-
“ lieve.”—There may be strange things
“ in the world, my dear Elizabeth,”
said lady Harrington, “ but the most
“ unaccountable I have ever met with
“ have been among mankind; for I
“ never found any thing in natural his-
“ tory, for which I could not some-
“ how or other account.”

From this period every thing went on smoothly with this amiable family for four years. My lord inspected the education of his sons, his farms, his hounds, and his stud. My lady that of her daughters, her domestic affairs, and her flowers. The young ladies became no mean proficient in gardening, and their hyacinths, tulips, auriculas, and roses were the admiration of the neighbourhood.

hood. Music and dancing masters came two months every year from London, and the worked bed for the fine tapestry chamber had never been recollected since the first morning of their arrival at the Abbey. They danced and had music (for the young women were tolerable performers upon the lute, and had agreeable voices); the young men rode in the ménage; and the female part of the family had their palfreys, for at that time the luxury of a coach was not common in London, and in the country the roads were impassable for such vehicles. These young people improved in mental and bodily accomplishments. Robert had a good figure, and an animated countenance; possessed a high sense of honour, and seemed inclined to a martial life, but was rather of a grave turn of mind. He had been honoured, since his abode at the Abbey, with letters
from

from prince Henry, the patron and playfellow of his childhood. These letters he hoarded with the same care as a miser does his treasure, and looked forward with impatience to the time when he should attend the prince to the wars.

John was full of spirit, hafty, and passionate ; good and ill tempered in five minutes ; fond of every thing by turns, and steady to nothing ; apt to take fire at what was never meant as an affront ; romantic and rash, and for ever trying if it were possible to break his neck in hunting ; eager to try all things, and never satisfied with any. He was well made, light, and active, and carried himself high and lofty as if he disdained the earth ; but was charitable, and therefore had seldom any money in his purse. A terrible tale of distress drew the tears from his eyes and the cash from his pocket.

ket. His father did every thing in his power to correct his foibles, by setting them in a ludicrous light, the only point in which he was vulnerable. He frequently gave his money to unworthy objects; yet my lord was in hopes that experience would cure him, and therefore in that respect left him to himself.

Elizabeth was tall and well shaped; she had good sense too, but it was frequently clouded by foolish fears; and whether these were constitutional or proceeded from habit, could never be determined. Her countenance was good, and she was allowed to be a very fine young woman.

Maticka was of a different turn, extremely lively, and did not know what personal fear was; cool, collected, and steadier than could be expected in a girl
of

of her age. She loved all her friends with the warmest affection, and had a good figure, though she was not so graceful as her sister; but, light and airy as the gossamer which floats on the autumnal breeze, she could go through almost any fatigue without suffering from it, as her sister frequently did.

Mrs. Bridget had heard the story of the Nun many times from goody Dickens and her husband, and was frequently teased by her young ladies to tell it; but that she never did; for Simon and his wife could never make her comprehend the main business, as they told it a different way every time, and therefore Mrs. Bridget could never get a clue strong enough to turn it properly about in her own mind, or mould it to any kind of system; on which account she lost the greatest of all possible pleasures,
telling

telling it to others. Not being able to connect the circumstances, however, she gave it up entirely, though it was *one way or other* (she often declared) the best and most moving history she had ever heard in her whole life, but very melancholy and shocking.

One fine October morning, as they were hunting, the deep-mouthed old English hounds had just made the hare break cover from a wood, and they were giving themselves up to the joys of the chace, when Robert saw a man who looked like a courier riding towards the Abbey, and, as he came nearer, strike into the path which led immediately to it. The scent lying breast-high, the chace and his companions had left him, and curiosity prompted Robert to inquire into this man's business. He therefore spurred his horse after him, and heard the
messenger

messenger found his horn at the Abbey-gate. Now he reflected that perhaps prince Henry had sent for him to attend him to the wars. If so (thought he) the time is come for me to be perfectly happy; my joy is unbounded at the idea; it must be so, or why—

He came up to the man, and asked him whence he came. “From court, with a pacquet from the king to the lord Harrington.”—“Nothing for me,” asked Robert eagerly. “No, my noble master; but bad news for England, and you too.”—“What,” said Robert, “are the Spaniards coming with another Armada?”—“Not so, my noble master; but prince Henry, the gallant prince Henry, is dead.”—“Dead! how? when? where? Tell me this moment.”—“Some say, fir, he was killed in a tournament; others,
3 “that

“ that he received a hurt there which
“ he never recovered ; others again say,
“ that the violent exercise threw him
“ into a fever ; and there are those who
“ will say he did not come by his death
“ fairly.”—“ Good heaven !” exclaimed
Robert “ what a day for England !”—
“ This packet,” said the messenger,
“ must be delivered to my lord your
“ father immediately. I must only rest
“ my horse a few hours, and set forwards
“ for London again.”

Robert drooped ; his legs could scarcely support him to his own apartment, where he could not help exclaiming,
“ Oh my prince, my adored master !
“ why, for the good of England, was I
“ not taken, and you blessed with long
“ life ? what a fatal day for my country !
“ but why do I put such an insignificant
“ being as myself in comparison with
“ you ?

“you ? My father would have mourned
“ me, my mother, my brother, and my
“ sisters ; but the grief would have gone
“ no farther than this little spot, where
“ the Abbey stands.” He then threw
himself upon the bed, and burst into
tears.

When lord Harrington returned from hunting, he found that the packet contained an order for him to attend the court, with a note from the king to the same purport. My lord was surprised, as he had for many years found himself neglected by his sovereign. My lady was amazed, and wished to know why he was sent for. Elizabeth apprehended it foreboded no good to her father. Matilda did not think at all upon the subject, as she saw her mother had no fears: but John was mad to go with him, and most terribly mortified at his refusal.

The next morning was fixed for his setting out towards London; and preparations were immediately ordered for that purpose.

In the evening my lord was in a deep reverie.—“What can be the reason, my dear lord,” said lady Harrington, “of this summons to court?”—“Perhaps,” replied my lord coolly, “the king, knowing that I was formerly engaged in a military life, may think to honour me with some employment; for I have heard that the Spaniards seemed inclined to be insolent of late.”—“But do you,” returned my lady, “think that insolence can warm the cold blood of king James? No, nothing but open violence can force him into a war; and what would have been the fate of England if the royal Elizabeth had
“ been

MAID OF HONOUR. 257

“ been of the same pusillanimous dif-
“ position? Her politics were quite dif-
“ ferent; the nation at large was not then
“ like a standing pool, which breeds a
“ thousand noxious insects. Are not
“ the minds of men fixed upon new
“ sects in religion, new forms of govern-
“ ment, new every thing? and what
“ are the causes, but ease and affluence?
“ The people’s minds must be exer-
“ cised; and those who wish for inno-
“ vation, either in church or state, in a
“ constitution firmly established by the
“ wisdom of our ancestors, whether that
“ wish proceed from the throne or the
“ people, are in my opinion equally
“ wrong. But in times when we are
“ upon our mettle, the brave and good
“ will come forward, and the sneaking
“ fellow, who would be sapping the
“ very foundation of our glorious con-
“ stitution in a profound peace, will be
“ kept

“ kept quiet by the sound of the drum
“ and the trumpet.”

“ Upon my word, Isabella,” said my
lord, “ you are a profound politician;
“ and I vote for your going to court
“ instead of me. But, to tell you my
“ thoughts seriously, if an armament is
“ going out, and I am offered any share
“ in the command, I shall decline it;
“ it is not proper for a man no longer
“ young, and who has been laid upon
“ the shelf, to trouble himself. No,
“ let those who are my juniors take it;
“ but, if you have no objection, I will
“ offer my son John to his majesty; it
“ may tame him.”—“ I hope it will,”
replied my lady; “ and I could wish
“ that any friend of yours, who is a
“ rigid disciplinarian, would take him;
“ he would then be kept within due
“ bounds, and prevented from encoun-
“ tering ideal dragons and monsters.”

The

The next day my lord pursued his journey, and lady Harrington began to think of her eldest son, who had been absent at breakfast. Finding, upon enquiry, that he had not left his room; she had too much feeling not to let him indulge his grief; having found by experience, that notwithstanding it is a dreadful disorder of the mind, it is one of that kind which cures itself; and she therefore offered no present consolation.

Mr. Butler, who had read prayers at the Abbey chapel that day, returning to the parsonage through the park, saw Robert sitting at the foot of an extremely old pollard ash; and as it has been observed, that it was the month of October, the venerable tree had just lost its leaves; Robert looked as melancholy as its fallen honours which were strewed around him. Mr. Butler saw and approached him. “ Ah, my good

“ friend,” said Robert, “ you do not
“ know what a loss I have sustained; you
“ cannot imagine what I at this moment
“ suffer. Prince Henry—” here he burst
into tears. “ The Prince, sir,” replied
Mr. Butler, “ is certainly happy. I have
“ been ever out of the way of courts
“ and princes; but yet I feel the loss of
“ prince Henry as of a good man, and
“ one who, in all probability, would have
“ made a great king. The whole
“ nation spoke well of him, and he is
“ therefore a general loss. But you
“ know, that this life is only a state of
“ probation: if you do not, Mr. Fair-
“ fax has taught and I have preached
“ in vain.”—“ Mention not Fairfax,”
said he sharply: “ he hates kings
“ and kingly government.”—“ Then
“ he is not what I took him for,” re-
turned Mr. Butler; “ but this is not
“ to our present purpose; I could wish
“ to

“ to console you, by representing that
“ the prince is, if you have a proper
“ idea of what our religion teaches, in
“ a situation to be envied. The pangs
“ of death are past with him; and if it
“ be possible for prince Henry to look
“ down upon this sublunary world, he
“ will pity our frailty in lamenting him.
“ He is happy, and above the care of
“ mortals.”—“ My good sir,” returned
Robert, “ what you say is perfectly
“ right; but could you practice what
“ you now enforce ?” —“ I would cer-
“ tainly endeavour, sir.” —“ But have
“ you had any trials ?” —“ Why, if you
“ will allow the loss of a son at eigh-
“ teen, and a daughter at seventeen,
“ who were dutiful and obedient, to be
“ such, I have. They were long sicken-
“ ing, I might say dying; a consump-
“ tion was the complaint, and I saw
“ them decline gradually as the sun sets

“ in a fine evening. But go with me,
“ Mr. Harrington, and I will shew you
“ the seedling carnations and auriculas
“ which I have been privately nursing
“ for my lady. I hope to surprize her
“ next year with some beautiful flowers ;
“ I have some plants too for your sisters ;
“ and I wish to shew you a fine young
“ horse, four years old, and three colts.

The animals were much admired by the young man. “ I am greatly obliged to my good lord your father,” said Mr. Butler ; “ and I wish to lay myself under some obligations to his son : “ I therefore request it as a favour, that you will take one of them ; gratify an old man’s wishes, my good sir.” Robert hesitated, and then chose a three year old colt.

Robert gradually regained his cheerfulness, and followed his amusements and studies.

studies. The family had not heard any thing from my lord, except that he was well; the young people began to be extremely anxious; lady Harrington not so much so. She certainly wished to know the purport of the journey; but yet considered, that it might not be proper to trust it to writing; messengers might be curious, or bribed by those who were so. Restrained by these considerations, she waited patiently.

Robert was fond of reading aloud, and read well. Being one evening in the library, the ladies at their work, and John making fishing tackle, he said, "We have finished the Fairy Queen; shall we read sir Philip Sidney's Arcadia?"—"He is a great favourite of mine," replied lady Harrington, "and will, I am sure, entertain your sisters." He took down the book,

and found written upon a blank leaf, *This book is a gift from Matilda Devereux, to her dear friend, Isabella Markham.* —“ Pray, madam, who was this Matilda Devereux ?” — “ A dear friend of my youth,” answered lady Harrington, “ and one whom I have lamented many years.” — “ Is she dead, madam ?” asked Elizabeth. “ That I cannot tell, but will inform you what I know of her history.

“ Mr. Robert Devereux (afterwards the famous Earl of Essex), when a very young man, chose to marry privately a beautiful young woman of the name of Browne, who was a relation of lord Montacute’s. Lord Essex, his father, knew nothing of this wedding; and they had been married but a twelvemonth when his wife died in childbed of my friend Matilda Devereux.

" reux; Old lord Essex was a friend
 " and patron of my father's, and we
 " lived in Suffex in his neighbourhood.
 " Mr. Devereux came one day, in the
 " greatest distress imaginable, revealed
 " the secret, and informed my father
 " that his wife had just expired at a
 " farm-house about twenty miles dis-
 " tant; but that the people did not
 " know him, as he had taken a fictitious
 " name. My father was a man who
 " melted at a tale of woe; he was agi-
 " tated beyond measure; he could not
 " for some time recollect himself or tell
 " how to act. At length he said, " Are
 " you married, sir?"—"To prove that
 " I am," said the young man, " here
 " is the certificate of my marriage; take
 " and preserve it." Then falling into
 " an agony of grief, he exclaimed,
 " Oh my Matilda! never can I see you
 " more. I fear that you did not taste
 " one hour's happiness during the short
 " period

“period you were the wife of the un-
“fortunate Devereux! Tell me what
“I should do, sir John.”—“Think of
“your daughter, sir,” replied my father:
“Remember I am really your friend:
“First let me go and see the funeral
“rites performed; and three days
“hence meet me in the wood at the end
“of lord Montacute’s park. Return
“to your father, and let me conjure you
“to inform him of it.” He promised,
“nay almost swore, that he would break
“it to lord Essex, and blessed my father
“for the friendly part he was about to
“take in his affairs.

“My father went to the farm-house,
“where he saw, in the dead form of
“Matilda Devereux, all that was elegant.
“Her features were fixed, not in me-
“lancholy, but in grief. My father melt-
“ed at the violent impressions which
“sorrow

“ sorrow had marked in her counte-
“ nance.

“ The funeral was ordered; and he
“ gave the farmer to understand that
“ she was the daughter of a friend of his,
“ and had married against her father’s
“ consent; that her relations, of the name
“ of Browne, lived in Northumberland;
“ that the gentleman’s connexions lived
“ in the same county, and he believed
“ that he was a distant relation of lord
“ Essex, for his name was Devereux.

“ The farmer’s wife lamented the loss
“ of the lady; but said, that she could
“ not help suspecting, as she was so given
“ to crying and taking on; that she was
“ *not* the gentleman’s wife. But she
“ was so meek that it melted her very
“ soul to see her so unhappy; that she
“ had inquired all about those parts, and
“ her

“ her neighbours had done the same ;
“ that she was vastly rejoiced that things
“ were as they should be, for if she had
“ got an ill name by harbouring those
“ who were not so good as they ought
“ to be, she could never have shewn
“ her face at market nor fair again ; for
“ she and her husband had well to live,
“ and had kept up a good name for thir-
“ ty years together, the whole time they
“ had been married ; and it would have
“ been a parlous thing to have lost it at
“ last. Besides, her neighbours had not
“ stuck at giving her some items of the
“ matter ; they had said plainly enough
“ what they thought ; but now that it
“ was fairly come out, she could look
“ the best of them in the face again.
“ My father assured her she might ; for
“ he had the certificate of the marriage
“ in his pocket. The good woman
“ could not read ; she saw it, however,
“ and was satisfied.

“ My

“ My father attended the poor lady
“ to the grave ; but before her inter-
“ ment wrote her history upon parch-
“ ment, inclosed it in a little box and
“ put it in the coffin. To conciliate
“ matters still farther with the farmer’s
“ wife, he gave her great part of the
“ wearing apparel, and prevailed upon
“ her to keep the little Matilda at a cer-
“ tain stipend per week, and the pro-
“ mise of a present when he should take
“ her away, if she was healthy. He told
“ her his name and place of abode ; and
“ the next Sunday one of her sons came
“ on foot, and inquired if that was one
“ fir John Markham’s house,—to be
“ sure that all was right.

“ The next day fir John went to the
“ wood and met Mr. Devereux, who
“ had not informed his father of the
“ marriage ; nor could he go to lord
“ Mon-

“Montacute. He was ungovernable,
“and all but mad. My father, there-
“fore, was obliged to go alone, and was
“admitted. He told the story just as
“it was, and lord Montacute seemed not
“at all pleased with the affair. “I am
“surprised, sir John Markham,” said my
“lord, “that you should trouble your-
“self or me concerning such a business ;
“surely lord Essex was the properest
“person.”—“Your lordship,” returned
“my father, “must well know, that lord
“Essex is a very rigid man, and has not
“much compassion for the sufferings
“of others.”—“So am I, sir, to those
“who act wrong. The father of the
“young woman was, I believe, related
“to me ; he was an officer, under lord
“Essex, and was killed in one of
“the engagements with the Armada.”
“Surely, my lord,” returned my father,
“the daughter of a brave officer ought
“not

“ not to be neglected, even if she had
“ married a son of lord Essex. Do, my
“ good lord, give countenance to your
“ family.”—“ Why, sir John, I do not
“ know in this case how I can counte-
“ nance them. You know how much
“ I dislike the Devereuxes; and I will
“ not look upon the woman at all; she
“ might have consulted me before the
“ marriage; but when two hare-brained
“ young people choose to commit folly,
“ they wish to palm themselves upon
“ their relations. No, let her starve,
“ and torment me no more about it.”—
“ Your lordship forgets,” returned my
“ father, “ that I informed you the
“ young lady, your relation, was dead,
“ and I think happily released from a
“ world of misery.”—“ Why then this
“ long story, sir John?”—“ My lord,”
“ replied my father, “ what I have said
“ was to procure protection for her in-
“ fant

“fant daughter.”—“I will not protect—I will not countenance, one drop of the blood of a Devereux; and I dare say that lord Effex is of the same opinion in regard to mine.”—“Then,” said my father, “both yours and lord Effex’s blood shall find a protector in me.”—“Do you mean to insult me, sir John; perhaps, I may find a time—”—“At any time,” replied my father, “your lordship may find me. John Markham wears a sword to guard the innocent, and to protect himself from insult.” He then turned upon his heel, and left the room.

“My father mounted his horse in great wrath; and when he arrived, he found the son of Effex had left the wood. This displeased him much, as he had eighteen miles to travel before he reached his home. My father was

“ an honest good man, and lived with
“ great hospitality ; but he was not rich,
“ for he spent his income.—Riding on,
“ and ruminating, prudence suggested,
“ that if the infant he had sworn to pro-
“ tect should be entirely deserted by its
“ family, he was injuring his own chil-
“ dren by taking it into his house ; and
“ he reasoned thus :—I have four
“ children, and may have as many
“ more ; ought I then to take one who
“ has no claim upon me ? surely I can-
“ not justify myself in so doing.—He
“ stopped his horse, and the servant rode
“ up to him, thinking he wanted his
“ cloak. This circumstance broke the
“ thread of his reflections ; and he again
“ jogged on, almost without any reflec-
“ tion at all. At length certain fine
“ feelings, by which those who are poor
“ are tormented just as much as those
“ who are rich, burst upon him.

“ By

“ By heaven,” he exclaimed, “ it shall
“ be so. Why do I let such thoughts
“ enter my mind? What, shall not
“ John Markham do that which his
“ heart in its first emotions, in its natural
“ simplicity, told him was right? I will
“ protect the child, perhaps adopt her :
“ Providence has provided for me,
“ helpless innocence, therefore, has
“ claims upon me, and those claims
“ shall be answered.” He then put his
“ horse upon a canter, and thought of
“ nothing but reaching home, journey-
“ ing with a heart as light as that of a
“ boy of fifteen.

“ When my father returned, my mo-
“ ther was gone out, and sir John
“ was extremely impatient to entertain
“ her with the history of his journey.
“ My mother soon came in, and being
“ as eager to hear as he was to relate,
“ they

“ they both drew close to a table. My
“ father went through his narrative with-
“ out one interruption from my mother,
“ and then said, “ Well, have I done
“ right, my dear Isabella?”—“ Perfectly
“ so,” replied my mother; “ the
“ child will be a companion for our
“ daughter, as there are only a few
“ months difference; therefore, my dear
“ sir John, the sooner we get it home the
“ better.”—“ It is too young to bring
“ so far on horseback, Isabella.”—
“ Not at all,” answered my mother;
“ for, if you remember, sir Henry
“ West’s child was carried forty miles
“ in one day when it was but ten days
“ old.”—“ Well, after a month I will
“ send for it.”—“ I will go myself, sir
“ John; the old easy pad shall be led;
“ the child and the nurse can come very
“ well, and with a great deal of ease.”
“ My father assented to this plan.”

I must

I must here inform my readers, that lady Markham could see about twenty-times as far as sir John; for she never went a step upon this earth without considering the aspect of the heavens; she ascertained which way the wind set at her first going out, reflected upon every point to which it was possible for it to veer; and had what was proper to be done in such a case always ready.

Sir John, on the contrary, would set forth, without thinking of the matter; and if the wind set full in his teeth, it was just the same to him; for he scorned to take shelter of a hedge or a tree, or go a foot out of his way to prevent being wet through. Some have ill-naturedly enough said, he was so short-sighted, that he could not see an advantage; and others, that
if

if by chance he saw one now and then, he could not be brought to consider it as any advantage at all.

Lady Markham was as attentive as could be wished to sir John's story; yet at the same time she was turning and tumbling over in her mind all the advantages and disadvantages of the business; and upon maturely weighing them, the former seemed to preponderate; for instance, lord Essex was a strange man, but he was rich; he had been and might be again a friend to sir John; and suppose for his interference in this business my lord should break with him, yet he could not undo what he had done, which was getting them a grant of church lands, that at present (for want of money to improve them) were let for very little. Mr. Devereux would not

forlake his child, the child of a woman he so tenderly loved; and he would in all probability outlive his father, would then be very rich, and of course generous.

“My mother,” returned lady Harrington, “arranged the nursery to receive the little stranger, and in ten days set out to bring it home. The child was found in perfect health, the farmer’s wife was very liberal of her courtesies and compliments upon the occasion, and declared that she never saw a sweeter or better-natured creature in all her born days. That she had got a nice young woman as a wet nurse, who was so good of her that she wished to keep it everlastingly, and she hoped her husband and she was sure her honourable ladyship would take care of it; for that she couldn’t raise of
 “ nothing

“ nothing but of her ladyship’s goodness ;
“ and what everybody said must be
“ true.

“ My mother arrived safely with the
“ little Matilda, and was well pleased
“ with her charge, concerning whom she
“ indulged in the most delightful re-
“ veries. But my father was uneasy ;
“ he had neither seen nor heard from
“ Mr. Devereux, and after many inquiries
“ resolved to go to lord Effex. He
“ ordered his horse repeatedly for that
“ purpose ; my mother as often dissuad-
“ ed him, as she was in hopes lord Effex
“ might call, as he frequently did ; and,
“ as some people have strange ideas that
“ they can do better than their neigh-
“ bours, she wished to see him herself.
“ My mother was a very sensible
“ woman, and concluded that what she
“ might say would be better taken, as

“ my father was very apt to be extreme
“ ly abrupt in his conversation.

- “ One day, my father being absent
“ upon business, lord Essex called, and
“ my mother then wished him at home ;
“ for, when it came to the point, she did
“ not like the business. Lord Essex in-
“ quired very kindly after my father,
“ and said he would dine with them, as
“ my mother assured his lordship that she
“ expected him home. Though he did
“ not return, my lord did not seem at
“ all displeas'd at his absence, but sat
“ down to dinner with my mother, and
“ afterwards desired to see the children.
“ They were brought, when, fixing his
“ eyes upon the little Matilda, he said,
“ Upon my word, lady Markham, that
“ child strikes me as being very like my
“ son when he was at that age.” As
“ soon as the servants were withdrawn,
“ my

“ my mother, who was rather confused
“ at the observation, took courage, and
“ said, “ Lord Effex, that child has claims
“ upon your goodnes; it *is* your grand-
“ child.”—“ Impossible !” said my lord ;
“ for I am sure, lady Markham, you
“ would not receive my son’s natural
“ child into your house.”—“ True, my
“ lord,” returned my mother ; “ but that
“ is your grandchild by your son’s wife.
“ I have wished to have this secret re-
“ vealed to you, because I think it ought
“ not to be kept as such from you.”—
“ Why was it, madam ? My son must
“ have disgraced himself, or I should
“ have heard of it ; and I do not take
“ it well of you and sir John to foster
“ this child in your house. If my son
“ could do wrong, I should have hoped
“ that my friends would not have en-
“ couraged him. But who was the
“ mother of this child ? Some low-born
“ woman, I suppose.”—“ No,” return-

“ ed my mother, “ her father, captain
“ Browne, was a relation of lord Mon-
“ tacute’s. He was an officer under
“ lord Effingham, and was killed at sea
“ in an engagement with the Spaniards.”
“ Lord Montacute is my bitterest ene-
“ my !” exclaimed lord Effex.—“ And
“ her’s too,” rejoined my mother.
“ The unhappy lady died soon after
“ her daughter beheld the light. Lord
“ Montacute refuses to acknowledge
“ this child, and will not allow that it can
“ have any claims upon him.”—“ He
“ is right,” said Effex ; “ for if *he* would,
“ *I* would not.”—“ She was born at
“ a farm-house,” said my mother ;
“ your son came here almost distracted
“ at the death of his wife ; and two
“ months since I brought away the child
“ to protect it, expecting that Mr. De-
“ vereux would have informed your
“ lordship, which was the reason fir
“ John

“ John did not ; but hearing nothing
“ from him, I thought it right to give
“ you this information.”

“ And pray, my good lady, in what
“ light is this child considered in your
“ family at present ?”—“ As a distant
“ relation of mine, till your lordship
“ should be informed of the event.”

“ Lord Effex seemed totally absorbed
“ in thought for some time, and then
“ said to my mother, not without hesita-
“ tion, “ I feel myself much obliged to
“ you, lady Markham, and to sir John,
“ for your care and attention to my
“ family ; but I must——I must see my
“ son before I can determine upon any
“ thing. For the present, give the
“ infant, my good madam, your protec-
“ tion, and you shall hear farther from
“ me.” Then, seeming to recollect
“ himself,

“ himself, “ my friend sir John has with
“ his usual good-nature and hospitality
“ taken the child into his house, who
“ I am sure must be in want of many
“ things I am unacquainted with. There-
“ fore, permit me, lady Markham, to
“ leave this (taking out his purse) ;
“ and if you will expend it for the child’s
“ use, you will be laying me under new
“ obligations.” He then made a formal
“ bow and left the room.

“ My mother examined the purse, and
“ found that it contained fifty marks. As
“ she was ruminating upon this event,
“ my father came in, and she informed
“ him of the visit. “ I am glad of it
“ with all my heart (rubbing his hands) ;
“ I am happy that it is over ; now
“ every thing will go on well ; but I
“ was much afraid, from the violence
“ and severity of my lord’s temper,
“ that he would have flown out and dis-
“ owned

“owned the poor thing.”—“He has
“not acknowledged her,” replied my
“mother. “Why,” returned my fa-
“ther, “did not you tell me he
“thought her like his son, before he
“could even guess who she was?”—
“Yes,” replied my mother. “And
“did he not thank us for what we had
“done to serve the child, and has he not
“left a purse of money, and wished us
“to take care of it?”—“All this I ad-
“mit, my dear sir John; but I saw
“nothing melting about his eyes when
“he was told that the infant was his
“grand-daughter, though he seemed
“gratified when I informed him that she
“was known in this family only as a re-
“lation of mine.”—“Depend upon it,”
“returned my father, “he only wants
“to have some conversation with his son
“about it. I am sure my old friend and
E 4 “patron

“patron will not do that which is not perfectly right.” My mother had doubts upon the subject:

“In a few days my father received a note from lord Effex, stating that he wished to see him. He obeyed the summons; “I wished to see you, sir John,” said his lordship; “but how am I to thank or repay you and lady Markham for your kindness?”—“My lord,” returned my father, “our obligations to you are such that the debt must ever remain on my side.”—“I have been thinking upon this affair a great deal,” said lord Effex, “and I have seen my son with less resentment than I thought it possible for me to feel upon so trying an occasion. You must imagine, that an only son’s marrying, as he has done, while yet a mere boy, and into a family with
“which,

“ which, you know, sir, I was never upon
“ good terms, must be a very disagree-
“ able circumstance.” — “ Very true,”
“ replied my father; “ and I hope, if
“ any of my sons were to do the like, I
“ should, from your lordship’s good ex-
“ ample, be reconciled just in the same
“ manner. But I own myself rather
“ void of consideration when my blood
“ is agitated by what I do not like.”

“ We are all men and not angels,”
“ replied his lordship; “ but you know
“ I am burthened with another child as
“ it were; and my son is so young, that
“ I do not like the world at present
“ should be made acquainted with the
“ folly of a boy just setting out in life.
“ He is now at the court, and I have
“ prevailed upon him to have it kept
“ secret, provided lady Markham will
“ continue her patronage; and I have
“ given

“ given him my honour to provide for
“ its support and education in a liberal
“ manner, till he is in a proper situation
“ to acknowledge her as his daughter.”
“ —“ Do not think about that,” said
“ my father; “ she shall be treated
“ like my own daughter; and as to
“ education, it will be some time before
“ she will want any thing of that sort.”

“ After dinner my lord seemed in
“ perfect good-humour; and they were
“ extremely happy. He entertained
“ my father with many pleasant adven-
“ tures he had met with in his travels;
“ particularly of a famous physician
“ that he saw at Padua, who had re-
“ covered him from a most deplorable
“ state of health. He was thought to
“ be dying several times; but by the
“ care and attention of his good friend
“ the doctor he was perfectly cured.
“ This

“ This man, my dear sir, was the most
“ wonderful creature in the world ; for
“ he looked nature through ; and used
“ to say, that every family had a tem-
“ perament peculiar to themselves ;
“ what was good for one, therefore,
“ was hurtful to another ; so skilful was
“ he in making discriminations of the
“ various constitutions of mankind. He
“ studied mine so well, my dear friend,
“ that he gave me a powder which
“ would always agree with a Devereux.
“ And, sir John, as there is another of
“ us come into the world, and I have the
“ greatest affection for her, as every man
“ ought to have for his race, I will give
“ you a little box of it to present to lady
“ Markham for the use of our Matilda.
“ My son was a very sickly weak child,
“ and his mother found it of the greatest
“ use to him.” Then getting up, and
“ taking out of a cabinet a little gold
“ box,

“ box, he said, “ Give this, my good
“ friend, to lady Markham, and explain
“ its uses.”

“ My father received the box, and
“ took his leave. He was extremely
“ rejoiced at the reception my lord had
“ given him, and delivered the box,
“ with a history of its virtues, to my
“ mother.

“ Mr. Devereux remained at court ;
“ but he wrote frequently to my mother,
“ and his letters were filled with expres-
“ sions of love and tenderness for his little
“ Matilda, and thanks to sir John and
“ lady Markham for their care and
“ attention, accompanied by presents,
“ which at that time might not be very
“ convenient to him, as he had only a
“ certain stipend from his father, who,
“ to give him his due, paid liberally for
“ the

“ the protection Matilda received from
“ us. Mr. Devereux had a generous
“ soul, and his letters always expressed
“ a concern, that his father confined
“ him so closely to the court, that it was
“ impossible for him to see his daughter,
“ who was the object nearest his heart;
“ and from this we understood that my
“ lord did not wish him to see her.

“ The little Matilda and myself, even
“ at five years old, were great friends.
“ About this time she was taken ill,
“ though not dangerously. My mother
“ began to think of the sympathetic
“ powder, which was to cure all the
“ blood of all the Devereuxes. She
“ examined the box, and found that
“ it was a composition of red roses
“ dried and powdered, but she could
“ plainly discover some other ingredi-
“ ent. Sympathetic powders, and such
“ trash,

“trash, were very much the fashion
“of that time. My mother was a
“great physician, a good apothecary,
“and a tolerable surgeon; but, unfor-
“tunately, had no opinion of cures
“being performed by sympathetic
“powders. She would never take her-
“self, nor permit her family to take,
“any medicine, but what she was per-
“fectly acquainted with; and had there-
“fore an inclination to try these powders
“upon some brute before she ventured
“even with the blood of a Devereux.

“Going up stairs, and reflecting upon
“this subject, she met a cat, took up the
“animal, put it into a closet, chopped
“up some meat with the sympathetic
“powder, gave it to the cat and left it.
“The next morning, upon opening the
“door, she was extremely surpris'd at
“finding the creature dead, and appa-
“rently

“rently poisoned. The agonies of her
“mind were so extreme, that human
“nature could not support it, and she had
“a severe fit of illness; but as she was
“determined not to make others miser-
“able, she kept the secret. Having
“sometime after given a portion of the
“powder to other animals, with the
“same effect, she in a rage threw the
“remainder into the fire, and compos-
“ing another mixture, as like it as pos-
“sible, of dried roses and white chalk,
“she put it into the little gold box.

“Mr. Devereux was now abroad;
“but before he went had got into high
“favour with the queen. He had only
“one opportunity of seeing his daughter,
“but was wonderfully pleased with her
“person, and the good account my
“mother gave of her. He left us, per-
“fectly satisfied with her situation, and
“declaring

“ declaring that the only regret he felt
 “ was at the unaccountable dislike his
 “ father had conceived against her being
 “ acknowledged. Yet he flattered him-
 “ self *that* prejudice would have an end,
 “ as his lordship seemed extremely fond
 “ of her.

“ For my own part, I thought Ma-
 “ tilda an angel. We were the sincerest
 “ friends in the world, and aptly an-
 “ swered the description Shakspeare has
 “ given in his *Midsummer Night's*
 “ *Dream*:

———We, Hermia,

Have with our needs created both one flower,
 Both on one sampler, sitting on one cushion,
 Both warbling of one song, both in one key;
 As if our hands, our sides, voices and minds,
 Had been incorporate: so we grew together,
 Like to a double cherry seeming parted;
 But yet a union in partition.

“ I was

“I was nearly one year her senior, but could not compare with her either in personal charms or mental accomplishments. When she was about thirteen, Matilda fell ill with a feverish complaint, lost her appetite, and looked very badly. Lord Effex came, observed it, and said to my mother, ‘This child looks unwell; what is the matter with her?’—‘I think she is feverish my lord.’—‘And what do you give her, lady Markham?’—‘Milk, whey, and strawberries.’”

“I should imagine, madam,” replied my lord, “that the Devereux powder must be a good thing; indeed, I am sure it is; for my family have had numberless trials of it; I have taken a great deal myself, and you know what an uninterrupted good state of health I have enjoyed for many years.”

“I can have no other objection to giving
“ing

“ing it to Matilda, my lord, than think-
“ing that it will be thrown away upon
“so light a complaint. So valuable a
“medicine should be reserved for a case
“of extreme danger.”—“I have a
“large store of it, my good lady, and
“am so very unhappy at seeing Matilda
“look so ill, that I beg some of it may
“be given to her immediately.”

“My mother took out the powder
“and gave a dose to Matilda, narrowly
“watching my lord at the same time ;
“then said carelessly to me, “Isabella,
“go with Matilda; she had better lie
“down, and do you stay with her. A
“confidential old nurse was in the room ;
“and my mother, seeing my lord visibly
“change countenance, kept the old
“woman about her till she saw him ready
“to faint. She then screamed aloud,
“sent nurse for all the people she could
“get together; and as soon as three
“or

“ or four came, exclaimed, “ See, lord
“ Effex is in a fit ; he will die ; for hea-
“ ven’s sake, nurse ! give me the pre-
“ cious Devereux powder in the gold
“ box !”

“ The domestics held him in vain ;
“ he cried for mercy, and made re-
“ sistance. My mother mixed up the
“ dose, which they forced down his
“ throat. He was then laid upon a
“ bed in the next room, all the servants
“ dismissed, except the nurse, and my
“ mother sat calmly down by the bed-
“ side to watch him. After a few
“ minutes profound silence, he said,
“ For God’s sake, lady Markham, send
“ away your attendant ; as a dying man
“ I request it.” My mother did so ; and
“ he spoke to her as follows :

“ You see before you, lady Mark-
“ ham, a wretch who has been the cause
“ of

“ of his own dissolution, and at the same
“ time the death of an innocent creature
“ who never offended him. I feel, ma-
“ dam, a lassitude and faintness; my
“ eyes have almost lost their faculty—I
“ am leaving this world—that powder
“ was poison——Adieu !”

“ My mother screamed aloud, ran
“ into the next room, and hurried nurse
“ to the physic closet, who soon return-
“ ed, laden with gallipots, phials, and
“ boxes. My mother mixed up a nau-
“ seous draught with syrup of poppies,
“ which he took immediately. She then
“ said very gravely, “ What I have now
“ given you, my lord, is, I am persuad-
“ ed, an antidote, that will take off
“ the ill effects of what you have swal-
“ lowed, were it the most subtile poison
“ in the world.—It is a precious medi-
“ cine, and was given to my mother by
“ a monk. It was never wanted in this
“ house

“ house before, and I hope never to have
“ occasion to try its virtues again.—But
“ I have now found your reasons for not
“ wishing to acknowledge Matilda as
“ your grand-daughter ; you do not wish
“ her to live. As her father has placed
“ her here, however, you may be sure
“ that I will give her protection, even
“ at the hazard of my own life ; and I
“ am almost sorry that I have endeavour-
“ ed to preserve yours. [*He groaned.*]
“ My care for your soul’s happiness has
“ made me wish to save you, that this
“ awful circumstance may hereafter pro-
“ duce justice and repentance.

“ The world, my dear lady Mark-
“ ham, the world——” —“ How can
“ you mention the world at this time, my
“ lord ? Is this a moment for such trifles ?
“ Repent of your crimes, and the secret
“ will be for ever locked up in this
“ breast.”

“ My

“ My best friend, my preserver ! but
“ will not the servants think all this
“ bustle strange ? ” — “ I can account for
“ that,” said my mother, “ by telling
“ nurse a story of sympathetic powder;
“ which she will not understand ; and
“ she will tell to others what they can-
“ not comprehend. Therefore, my lord,
“ you may rest secure from them ; thank
“ Providence for having preserved the
“ innocent child, and compose yourself
“ to sleep.” He would try. The dose
“ of poppies soon had the desired effect,
“ and he forgot the world.

“ My lord slept soundly four or five
“ hours, and when he awaked sent for
“ my mother, who inquired after his
“ health.—“ I can hardly tell you,
“ madam ; I have slept, it is true ; but
“ my dreams have been horrible, and
“ my imagination busily employed.”—
“ *Well, I hope,*” returned my mother.
“ How

“ How is that possible, lady Markham !
“ but I will try, I will endeavour,
“ madam.”—“ Endeavour at present,
“ my lord, to rise ; it will refresh you ;
“ I will send your servant, and then-at-
“ tend you in the drawing-room.” In
“ half an hour my lord entered, but ap-
“ peared faint and weak. Matilda and
“ I were in the room, and he considered
“ her very attentively. After paying
“ our compliments, my mother observed
“ that the air would do Matilda good,
“ and sent us into the park.

“ My mother spoke very firmly to
“ lord Effex.—“ It is surely your lord-
“ ship’s duty to acknowledge Matilda as
“ your grand-daughter ; to settle some-
“ thing upon her, and to do, my lord,
“ what in fact you ought.”

“ That child, madam, has been a
“ trouble to me ever since it was born.
“ It

“ It stands in the way of my son’s fortune ;
“ and at present, my good lady, I am
“ very unable to think about it.”—
“ This,” returned my mother, “ is the
“ properest time that could possibly pre-
“ sent itself ; for sir John will not re-
“ turn this evening, and we shall meet
“ with no interruption. Your son is
“ abroad ; life, at best, is held by a very
“ precarious tenure. Acknowledge Ma-
“ tilda’s relationship. In what way,
“ my lord, can it possibly disgrace you ?
“ Your principal estates are settled upon
“ a distant heir male if your son should
“ have none. I must, my lord, have
“ something done for Matilda.”

“ Is not the allowance I make her
“ sufficient, madam ? if it be not, I
“ am willing to double it.”—“ You pay
“ liberally, my lord ; but that is not per-
“ manent ; and the affection I bear the
“ dear

“ dear girl makes me think of every
 “ thing I can for her benefit.”—“ Well,
 “ madam,” said he peevishly, “ what
 “ would satisfy your friendship?”—
 “ Your full acknowledgment of your
 “ son’s marriage, because I wish for
 “ justice.”

“ I will not do that,” he replied in a
 “ rage. “ I would not do it for the
 “ world. What, the blood of a Monta-
 “ cute to be acknowledged by Effex!
 “ No, madam.”

“ What would the blood of the Mon-
 “ tacutes think of this day’s transaction?”
 “ returned my mother. “ But come,
 “ my lord, I am a woman of honour,
 “ and you shall find me so. Here is pen,
 “ ink, and paper; give me under your
 “ hand a settlement to Matilda of five
 “ hundred pounds a-year upon your estate

“ that is not entailed.” — “ I cannot
“ write, madam ; my mind is so relaxed,
“ that I am entirely unfit for such busi-
“ nefs at present.” — “ I am sorry to
“ distress you, my lord, upon such an
“ occasion ; but will you permit *me* to
“ take the pen ?” He nodded assent,
“ and she wrote an obligation from him
“ to Matilda Devereux, giving her five
“ hundred pounds a-year in land, to
“ commence immediately after his death ;
“ and this he very reluctantly signed.
“ At the same time my mother told
“ him, that she must have it properly
“ executed upon parchment. Neither
“ did she forget to put in the words
“ *Matilda Devereux, my grand-daughter.*

“ My mother told the nurse a long
“ complex story about sympathetic
“ powders ; and the first opportunity
“ after she had received the intelligence,
“ she

“ she drew the whole household around
“ her, in which were included lord Essex’s
“ servants. The old woman opened her
“ oration by telling them of a wonderful
“ powder that my lord had brought from
“ beyond sea, which was contrived by a
“ conjuror on purpose for the family of
“ Devereux; that her lady, not exactly
“ knowing its virtues, had given a little
“ of it to her kinswoman Miss Matilda,
“ and that the virtue of the medicine,
“ not agreeing with her, had flown out
“ of her blood into lord Essex’s, and if
“ they had not given him a good dose in
“ the nick of time to operate properly,
“ he would first have gone mad and then
“ died. They stared, made their separate
“ comments, and told it with additions
“ and improvements in their own way
“ to their several acquaintance.

“ My father returned next day, and
“ was extremely distressed by the ac-
“ count

“ count given him by the servant who
 “ took his horse; but till he got into
 “ the house, he could not make out
 “ what was the matter. My mother
 “ then told him, in the presence of lord
 “ Effex, that it was a fainting-fit which
 “ had alarmed them exceedingly; and
 “ his lordship declared he was perfectly
 “ recovered, thanks to lady Markham’s
 “ good nursing.]

“ Two years passed with little or no
 “ variation; my mother entertained cer-
 “ tain opinions respecting lord Effex,
 “ but those she chose to confine to her
 “ own breast. Matilda improved daily;
 “ her good-nature, cheerfulness, wit,
 “ vivacity, and beauty made her the
 “ darling of our family; my father per-
 “ ceived that his eldest son was extremely
 “ partial to her; and, as a man of ho-
 “ nour, thought better to check it, con-
 “ sidering

“sidering Matilda as the grand-daughter
“of his friend, and at the same time
“recollecting the difference of their
“rank and probable fortune. My bro-
“ther shewing an inclination for the
“army, lord Essex procured him a
“subaltern’s commission, and he was sent
“to the Low Countries, where he was
“cut off before Zutphen at the age of
“nineteen. We were all much affected
“by this loss, and it was a considerable
“time before my father recovered his
“spirits. Matilda was greatly concern-
“ed, though ignorant of the true mo-
“tive of his being a soldier. “Ah, my
“dear Isabella!” she said in an agony
“of grief, “your William, your dear
“William is gone! I loved him with
“the affection of a sister; what can I do
“now, but transfer that friendship to you
“and my dear lady Markham, as the
“only friends I have in the world!”—

“What, is not my father your friend?”

“Yes, your father is a very sincere friend to me; but I have not that ardent affection for him which I feel for lady Markham and you.”

“Lord Essex grew very infirm, and very morose; the deed was executed upon parchment in all its proper forms, and he gave it to my mother, who just looked in it to see that the sum specified was right, and went to her cabinet to give him the other; but the key was lost, and she sent for a person to break it open. My lord said, it was of no consequence; he should see her again soon, and would then receive the paper. The next day the key was found; my mother sent a special messenger with the deed, and, as she was, at leisure, thought proper to read it before she deposited
“ it

“ it in her cabinet. She found all she
“ wished, except the insertion of Matilda
“ Devereux *my relation*, instead of
“ Matilda Devereux *my grand-daughter*.
“ I was with her in the room, and she
“ was so provoked, that she vented her
“ anger aloud, termed him a villain, and
“ determined to prove her power over
“ him by having it inserted exactly as
“ she thought proper.

“ But, alas, what are all our schemes
“ in this world! fleeting as the clouds
“ which are continually passing over our
“ heads. Lord Essex grew worse; my
“ father saw him a day or two before he
“ expired, and when he came home
“ told my mother that he was sure
“ my lord was fit for a better world.
“ She shook her head. “ He is,” said
“ my father, “ if repentance and con-
“ trition are right; and we are taught
“ from

“ from our earliest infancy to believe they are so. But one thing puzzles me, Isabella, extremely: what can it be that affects him so much? I have known him many years; I knew him to be haughty and imperious; yet I ever knew him just, generous, and charitable. What, therefore, can affect him? He always seemed to me to have more virtues and fewer vices than any man I was ever acquainted with.”—“ It is impossible for you to guess, my dear sir John; he may have some undivulged crimes; and, though a man may live an atheist, yet he can never die one. Lord Essex was particularly cautious about entering into conversations in which religion had any thing to do; I never heard him touch upon the subject more than twice; and he seem-

“ ed

“ ed to have very little, which made
 “ him particularly disagreeable to me.”

“ I have thought,” replied my father,
 “ particularly within these few years,
 “ notwithstanding that he has ever been
 “ liberal of his money to Matilda, and
 “ made you so many handsome pre-
 “ sents ——” Here a servant entered
 “ with a letter, which informed them
 “ that lord Essex was dead, and that the
 “ steward wished, to see my father, as
 “ the young lord was absent. My fa-
 “ ther went to the castle; he was con-
 “ sulted about and attended the funeral,
 “ and wrote an account of my lord’s
 “ decease to his son.

“ My mother opened the melancholy
 “ affair of her grandfather’s death to
 “ Matilda, soothed, consoled, and com-
 “ forted her; and then expressed great
 “ joy

“ joy in the hope she had, of soon seeing
“ her in a proper situation, by her father’s
“ arrival in England, who would, no
“ doubt, shew her to the world as his
“ daughter, and not (as my mother
“ expressed herself) the distant relation
“ of sir John Markham’s wife. Ma-
“ tilda had been some years informed
“ of her birth and consequence in the
“ world; but, contrary to my mother’s
“ wishes, her spirits were depressed
“ whenever she conversed about her
“ fortune and situation; and when my
“ mother was holding up high birth,
“ great wealth, and their attendant con-
“ sequences, she would sigh and say,
“ My dear madam, how can I be hap-
“ pier than I am at present? I would
“ rather be a distant relation of yours
“ than a duchess, provided I had a
“ little fortune to prevent my being bur-
“ densome to you. I have now that
“ fortune ;

“fortune; so far my wishes are answered; and you and my dear Isabella are the comforts of my life. I have now every thing that I can either want or wish.”

“Content, my dear Matilda,” replied my mother, “is the greatest blessing this world can give; and when we have health and competence, a palace or a cottage will be much the same thing. But why should a young woman like you despise what all the world sets a value upon?” — “Because, my dear madam, I am now happy, and every step I might take towards greatness would, I think, make me less so.”

“Lord Essex returned; and the pleasing sound of *lady Matilda* vibrated in my mother’s ears; but she dared

“ not make use of the appellation with-
 “ out the earl’s leave. After paying his
 “ duty to the queen, he came to my fa-
 “ ther’s, and found his daughter one of
 “ the most beautiful young women in
 “ the world, and possessed of that cer-
 “ tain elegance and grace which attracts
 “ everybody and which nobody can
 “ define. — Lord Essex was wonderfully
 “ pleased with her, and told my mother
 “ that it would be the pride of his life
 “ to introduce her at court ; but added,
 “ I am upon such terms with my royal
 “ mistress at present, that my having
 “ been married might not be agreeable
 “ to her. Therefore, Matilda, if you
 “ are happy with these good friends, fir
 “ John and lady Markham, stay with
 “ them ; or I will send you to lady
 “ Coniers, who is a distant relation of
 “ lady Markham’s, who knows you only
 “ as such ; and nothing farther would I
 “ have

“ have known at present, though I hope
“ soon to take you into the world, with
“ all the splendor that should accompany
“ the beloved daughter of Effex.”

“ My father did not survive this
“ period more than a year, I believe.
“ The death of his friend lord Effex
“ hastened his. We remained in the
“ family-house, as my elder brother was
“ not married, and the younger was at
“ college, being intended for the church.
“ The younger children’s fortunes were
“ small; my mother had a gentle-
“ woman’s jointure; Matilda lived with
“ us, and we did extremely well. Lord
“ Effex was generous, nay liberal in the
“ extreme. My mother hoarded up
“ the income of her jointure every year;
“ and lord Effex was perpetually mak-
“ ing Matilda magnificent presents of
“ jewels, telling her at the same time,
“ that

“ that she would soon want them on the
 “ occasion of her introduction at court.
 “ But he was too much involved in poli-
 “ tics and business to attend to this after-
 “ wards, though he had a great ascend-
 “ ancy over the queen.

“ He called one day, and told my
 “ mother that he was come to steal me
 “ away; that one of the maids of ho-
 “ nour was married, and the queen had
 “ been graciously pleased to nominate
 “ me to the honour of succeeding her.
 “ My mother was in raptures at this
 “ event, though it was not so with Ma-
 “ tilda and myself; but when we found
 “ my mother considered this appoint-
 “ ment so very advantageous to me, we
 “ gave it up; and my lord promised to
 “ intercede with the queen to permit
 “ me to spend one month in the year
 “ with my mother, in which he suc-
 “ ceeded, and I went to court, counting
 “ the

“ the months, weeks, and days, to the
“ time which was to bring the happy
“ period that I should pass with them.

“ I supported my situation with satisf-
“ faction to my royal mistress, and saw
“ my mother and Matilda every year in
“ the month of August.

“ The times now grew boisterous;
“ Essex courted popularity, and was
“ blamed and applauded as people’s
“ minds suggested: at length his fate was
“ decided, and that all-accomplished
“ nobleman was beheaded. This blow
“ was terrible to Matilda; she had now
“ no father, no protector. He had ever
“ expressed great affection for her, and
“ had given her a number of jewels,
“ but nothing farther; and it was happy
“ for her, that my mother had got the
“ settlement. As the estate was in
“ other

“ other hands, my mother was the only
“ person she had to look up to.

“ Matilda had been addressed by
“ many young men of family and for-
“ tune ; but her father had entertained
“ such high hopes of himself, that he
“ rejected them all through my mother,
“ as not one of them considered her
“ otherwise than as her relation. The
“ world supposed that Essex certainly
“ flattered himself the queen would
“ marry him. What a change at last !
“ The Devereux estate went to a distant
“ relation ; and he had supported his
“ dignity in such a princely manner,
“ that his personals did not quite pay
“ his debts. He was an ambitious,
“ proud, uncertain man, fond of po-
“ pularity and the applause of the mul-
“ titude ; and that was his ruin. His
“ person was remarkably handsome and
“ dignified ;

“ dignified ; but there was no depend-
“ ing upon him ; he did not possess
“ true dignity of soul ; for what is every
“ natural grace or acquired accomplish-
“ ment, without that honourable firm-
“ ness which distinguishes a noble from
“ a common mind ?

“ My mother lamented lord Effex
“ extremely, on account of my bro-
“ thers ; and in all probability, had he
“ lived, he would have been either the
“ raising or ruin of them. She had used
“ all her art, by frequent writing and
“ conversations, to keep up his atten-
“ tion to the promises he had given
“ her.—She also interested herself so
“ much in Matilda’s affairs, that the
“ world began to say, that she was lord
“ Effex’s natural daughter ; and they
“ talked so freely upon the subject, that
“ my mother wished to set them right
“ by

" by producing the certificate of the
 " marriage; but Matilda would not
 " permit it. " What does it signify,"
 she would say, " whose daughter I am,
 " when I have you for my friend, my
 " more than mother? I am satisfied,
 " my dear lady Markham; I have a
 " competency, and what could the world
 " give me? No, no; the world would
 " give me nothing, in all probability, but
 " reflections upon the fate of my father."
 —" My dear Matilda, the world ought
 " to give, and will give lady Matilda
 " Devereux her due; and I hope to
 " convince you that I am right."

" I went at the usual time to pass the
 " happy month with my mother and my
 " friends, and found, to my great grief,
 " the former very much broken. From
 " a remarkably spirited active woman,
 " she was become low and dull; and
 " neglected

“ neglected her affairs. It was with dif-
“ ficulty we could persuade her to walk
“ in an orchard, once a favourite place,
“ and where she had been making im-
“ provements for some years ; in short,
“ she seemed not long for this world.
“ One day, as we were sitting together ;
“ and I was endeavouring to entertain
“ her with the history and anecdotes of
“ the court, which she used to be fond
“ of hearing, she stopped me by saying,
“ My dear Isabella, I have something
“ to say to you and Matilda ; if you love
“ your mother, attend.—I feel as if I
“ were not permitted to remain long
“ with you. — My strength decreases,
“ like dew before the sun.—Let me, if
“ time will admit, talk seriously to you
“ both.—I have, Isabella, saved some
“ money, which I have equally divided
“ between you and Thomas. Henry
“ inherits my jointure ; and I wish he
“ were

" were married, that this house might be
 " a proper asylum for my dear Matilda:
 " A single woman, like you, always
 " wants a protector.—But when I am
 " gone, my relation, lady Coniers, will
 " receive you into her family; and if
 " you will take the advice of a sincere
 " and a parting friend, permit Isabella to
 " have the care of your papers, and the
 " certificate of your mother's marriage,
 " as I am sure her affection for you will
 " preserve them as treasures.—And
 " now, my dear children, I have done
 " with this world."—We wished to
 " send for my brothers. "No," she
 " said, "it would hurry them and me
 " too.—I have been good for nothing
 " for some time, and it will be a happi-
 " ness to lay me down to rest.—Take
 " care of my cabinet the papers which
 " belong to Matilda's share; do not con-
 " sider me dead, and remember the dying
 " intentions

“injunctions of your mother, to keep
“them safe.”

“The exertion she made occasioned
“her to faint. We hoped it would be
“soon over, and that she would be
“better; we thought she began to re-
“vive, when suddenly, fixing her eyes
“upon us, she pressed our hands and
“expired.—Our affliction and surprise
“were unbounded; we could not believe
“what had happened; for she had not
“been what might be called ill. It is
“true, for a few weeks she drooped,
“and seemed dispirited; but she was
“only sixty, and was a year back
“much more active than many women
“of thirty.—The activity of her mind,
“I believe, impaired her strength, and
“her constitution could no longer sup-
“port that mental labour which she so
“many years exerted.

“I wrote

“ I wrote to lady Coniers to inform
“ her of my mother’s request; and she
“ seemed much pleased at the thoughts
“ of receiving Matilda into her house.
“ I was not much acquainted with her,
“ but I thought myself happy in having
“ my friend fixed in a respectable family.
“ The only circumstance which gave
“ me pain was, that they lived at a
“ greater distance from the court than
“ my mother; yet I had hopes that my
“ royal mistress would permit me to
“ pay my annual visit to lady Coniers,
“ who had given me a pressing invita-
“ tion to that effect.—Matilda kept her
“ jewels, and I carried her parchments
“ with me to the court.

“ The following autumn the queen
“ graciously gave me leave to visit Ma-
“ tilda, which journey I performed with
“ a light heart, and was received by her
“ with

“ with pleasure. When I arrived,
“ the lady of the house was absent for
“ two days. — I settled my stewardship
“ with Matilda for the year. As the
“ estate lay in a distant county, I
“ was obliged to prove my right to re-
“ ceive the rents, and had employed an
“ agent in town for that purpose. — We
“ passed the days of lady Coniers’ ab-
“ sence in the most delightful manner,
“ rambling through the woods, and
“ sitting and conversing upon the banks
“ in the corn fields, as the season was
“ extremely fine, and the corn ripe. In
“ the course of our conversations I ex-
“ pressed a hope that she was happy in
“ lady Coniers’ society. — “ As happy
“ as I can be, my dear Isabella, now our
“ good mother is no more; but she was
“ a superior being, lady Coniers is a
“ common one, and therefore not so
“ attractive to your friend. I have no
“ dislike

“ dislike to lady Coniers ; but she does
“ not seem to have many fine feelings
“ about her, and is not very anxious
“ whether she pleases or not. — But she
“ does not offend, and leaves me to do
“ every thing I like, except one, and I
“ am very well contented. I wish you
“ would marry, Isabella, that I might
“ live with you.” — “ Pray indulge my
“ curiosity, and inform me what that
“ one thing is which is disagreeable to
“ you.” — “ A trifle ; she encourages
“ her son to make love to me, and the
“ education she has given him is not so
“ good by a great deal as that which he
“ gives his dog or his horse. This is a
“ mere trifle ; I believe the young man
“ has a good heart, and might have gone
“ through life very well had he been
“ properly brought up ; for I never saw
“ any thing vicious about him.” — I
“ wished

“ wished her joy of the conquest, and
“ hoped to see the conquered.

“ Lady Coniers was a widow of forty-
“ five ; a very well-looking woman ;
“ said she was ten years younger than
“ was really the truth ; dressed well ;
“ kept a good table, and had been laying
“ snares for the heart of an old lord, her
“ neighbour, for five years, without
“ being tired ; had a great deal of dress,
“ and what is called cleverness.

“ She received me very politely, and
“ introduced me to her son, who said,
“ Faith, cousin, you are a fine girl
“ enough ; but no more like my dear
“ Matilda than an apple is like an
“ oyster.” — “ As an apple is not like
“ an oyster in any shape,” I replied,
“ I take it for granted, that we are both
“ charming in our way.” — “ No, you
VOL. I. G “ are

“are not so handsome as Matilda ; there
 “is as much difference between you as
 “there is between mother Huggins’s
 “market horse and Lofty my hunter.”—
 “And which do you prefer, Lofty or
 “Matilda ?” — “Why, Matilda in this
 “room, and Lofty when the hounds are
 “out ; you must be a great fool not to
 “guess at that ; but I find you could not,
 “with all your wit from court.” —
 “You are remarkably polite, Mr. Co-
 “niers,” I returned, “and so full of
 “flashes of wit, that the people at court
 “could not withstand you ten minutes.”
 “But they shall,” he replied, “for I
 “am to go there soon, to get the old
 “woman to lay the sword across my
 “shoulder, and then I shall be as good
 “a knight as the best of them.” —
 “You must go to the wars as soon as
 “you receive the honour of knighthood,
 “to try your sword and your spurs.” —
 “My

“ My spurs I have often tried in a long
 “ chase.” — “ I do not doubt it ; but if
 “ by your behaviour you do not do cre-
 “ dit to your knighthood, the queen’s
 “ cook will have the employment of
 “ cutting them off.” — “ You are talk-
 “ ing, my dear cousin, of what William
 “ knows nothing about.” — “ But he
 “ may in time,” said lady Coniers.

“ I was one day lamenting to lady
 “ Coniers, that Matilda had not the ad-
 “ vantages which her birth demanded ;
 “ for you know, lady Coniers, who she
 “ is.” — “ Oh, yes, very well, my dear ;
 “ she was daughter to the old lord
 “ Effex.” — “ No, madam,” I returned,
 “ she was daughter to that unfortunate
 “ nobleman Robert earl of Effex.” —
 “ No such thing, child ; you are wonder-
 “ fully mistaken.” — “ I am not, ma-
 “ dam ; my mother had the certificate
 “ of

“ of their marriage ; you know he mar-
 “ ried Matilda Browne, a relation of
 “ lord Montacute’s, who died soon after
 “ Matilda was born.”

“ You are certainly mad, my dear,”
 “ returned her ladyship ; “ she was
 “ daughter to the old lord Essex, and
 “ I know you to be a very clever dis-
 “ creet young woman ; nay, I have heard
 “ people who are much about the court
 “ say, that the queen has expressed as
 “ much. — But I am to blame, Isabella ;
 “ I ought to keep that secret to myself ;
 “ yet it concerns you ; — but it shall die
 “ with me ; for I do not think it alto-
 “ gether right to divulge the folly, not
 “ to say wickedness, of our relations.”

“ I was extremely surpris’d. “ For
 “ heaven’s sake, madam, what can you
 “ mean ?” — “ Why, my meaning is,
 “ what

“ what every body has known for
“ years.” — “ Do, tell me, my dear
“ lady Coniers; for you make me
“ miserable at I know not what.”

“ Well then, if you must know, I will
“ inform you. The young woman in
“ this house is not the legitimate daugh-
“ ter of the earl of Essex. No such
“ thing; Matilda is the daughter of the
“ old lord, and her mother was yours;
“ all the world suspected it; and you
“ know how very kind he was to your
“ family; what presents he made them,
“ and was for ever making to you all.
“ Your mother, dear cousin, when she
“ found herself declining, poor woman,
“ shewed me the settlement that lord
“ Essex made upon Matilda, and I
“ could see plain enough, by his terming
“ her his relation, that the world was
“ right.

“ right. Lady Markham, your mother,
“ my dear, was certainly a clever wo-
“ man, and managed this business well;
“ for which I give her unbounded cre-
“ dit; for if she had not, your father
“ would have been burthened with ano-
“ ther child, which would not have been
“ very convenient to him; for he was
“ neither very rich nor very prudent,
“ poor man! but your mother kept
“ every thing cleverly together; and this
“ was the only folly I ever heard of her
“ committing, and I don’t doubt but
“ she was very much in pocket by it.”

“ At the end of this speech, I arose
“ out of my chair; stamped about the
“ room like a mad woman; reviled
“ her in the bitterest terms possible;
“ vowed it was all a fabrication of her
“ own, and called down vengeance upon
“ her for daring to utter such a falsehood
“ against

“ against the characters of people who
“ were not alive to defend themselves.
“ I told her, that I had in my possession
“ the certificate of earl Essex’s marriage
“ with Matilda Browne ; and, in short,
“ I was so much agitated, as nearly to
“ faint : a friendly flood of tears relieved
“ me, and when I was a little recover-
“ ed, I proceeded thus :

“ If you *think*, lady Coniers, as your
“ *say* ; if you really believed Matilda to
“ be lord Essex’s natural daughter, would
“ you wish your only son to marry her ?
“ No ; with his great fortune, you would
“ certainly have him connected with
“ some young woman of high birth ;
“ and from my soul I believe that the
“ chief reason for your wishing him to
“ marry her, is, your full assurance that
“ she is the daughter of the earl of Essex
“ and Matilda Browne ; and you would,
“ were

“were she wife to your son, mould
“something out of it. — This is my
“opinion of you.”

“She replied very coolly, “My
“dear Isabella, you are quite in hero-
“icks, and I expect every minute to see
“some valorous knight, mounted upon
“a flying courser, come to your rescue ;
“but compose yourself. When these
“things have been whispered about,
“which I assure you they have been
“very much, I have ever defended
“my cousin Markham to the last word,
“and always took particular care to ob-
“viate every thing which could be urged
“against her ; and I do not doubt but
“the world thinks me a fool to allow
“my son, who is so much superior in
“fortune, and of a family as good as
“hers, to think of marrying her, who-
“ever

“ ever she may have sprung from. But,
 “ to convince you that I wish my dear
 “ cousin to be entirely exculpated from
 “ the charge laid against her, do send me
 “ the certificate of the marriage, (which
 “ shall be safely returned,) that I may
 “ shew it to those who think evil of
 “ her; for that will effectually convince
 “ them, and they will no longer dis-
 “ honour her memory.”

“ No, madam,” I returned; “ my
 “ mother was virtuous; — my mother
 “ never defamed her neighbours; — my
 “ mother, lady Coniers, never dared
 “ say a thing which was not true, — nor
 “ do a thing she dared not justify. —
 “ And the certificate I will keep myself.
 “ A time may come when it will proba-
 “ bly be of the first consequence to my
 “ friend.”

“ I then stalked out of the room ;
“ and as I passed along the gallery,
“ Matilda met me. I was disturbed,
“ and she wanted much to know the
“ cause. I told her, that I had been
“ talking with lady Coniers about my
“ mother, whose memory was so dear
“ to me ; that my situation in life
“ preventing me from seeing those who
“ knew her, and were acquainted with
“ her virtues, my spirits were therefore
“ much agitated by the conversa-
“ tion I had had with lady Coniers:
“ Another cause of disquiet proceeded
“ from my time being almost expired ;
“ for I was obliged to attend the court
“ in a few days. I conjured her, when
“ she found her situation disagreeable,
“ to inform me of it, and I would get
“ protection for her in some family near
“ London ; requested she would take
“ her money affairs into her own hands,
“ which she declined, but lamented the
“ trouble

" trouble I met with on her account.
 " I departed next morning, very ill satis-
 " fied with lady Coniers, and contrived
 " plans during my journey to get Ma-
 " tilda out of her house if possible.

" About a month after, I saw young
 " Coniers at court; he was knighted,
 " and became sir William. He gave
 " me a letter from Matilda; said he
 " hoped the air of the court had sweet-
 " ened me, for I was as sour as a crab
 " in the country; told me that he was
 " going to Ireland to see his estates, and
 " wondered, when he wanted to give
 " me a hearty shake of the hand, that I
 " was so shy. His conversation made
 " those about us laugh; and I must con-
 " fess that I was not much delighted with
 " my cousin.

“ Six months elapsed, and I heard
“ nothing from Matilda. I sent a special
“ messenger, who returned with a note
“ from lady Coniers, saying, that she
“ was come to town to me. I petition-
“ ed to go down to her, which was
“ granted. Lady Coniers told me, that
“ Matilda had left the house in a clandes-
“ tine manner about two months after I
“ went. “ I know (said her ladyship)
“ she is very fond of my son ; so pro-
“ bably, Isabella, she has followed him
“ to Ireland. Her servant Mary went
“ with her ; she took two of her horses,
“ leaving the third and her man servant
“ behind her ; and you cannot imagine,
“ my dear Isabella, what a pretty piece
“ of gossiping this has occasioned in the
“ neighbourhood. I assure you, that
“ could I have had the smallest idea of
“ what sort of a person she was, my house
“ should not have been open to her.”

“ What

“ What excuse did she make for going, madam ? ” — “ None in the world ; she had been at lady Corbet’s, as I understand, and rode off with Mary while the servants were at supper ; and I have not heard of her since. ” — “ What is become of her jewels, madam ? ” — “ Jewels ! I never knew she had any. ” — “ A great many very valuable ones, given her by her father. ” — “ She kept them very snug then ; for I never saw her wear any worth five pounds. ” I told her that they must be worth five thousand, and had cost twice the sum. — “ Then she has taken them with her ; but, my dear Isabella, do look at her clothes, and let them be bundled up, and taken away ; for I should detest the sight of them, or any thing else which belonged to such a creature. ” — “ Perhaps, ” I said, “ that creature is by
“ this

“ this time your daughter-in-law.”

“ No, no ; my son knows better than
“ to marry a runaway.”

“ The wardrobe was examined in
“ lady Coniers’ presence, but nothing
“ was found of any value, except her
“ clothes, books, and music ; all which
“ I sent to my apartments in London ;
“ settled every little pecuniary matter
“ with my *dear* cousin, and parted
“ friends.

“ I was not acquainted with lady
“ Corbet, and therefore it was an awk-
“ ward thing for me to call upon her ;
“ but I was resolved to do it, and she
“ received me with a great deal of po-
“ liteness ; she knew little of the affair,
“ and said there must be some mystery
“ in it ; that lady Coniers had taken
“ great pains to declare that Matilda was
“ gone

" gone to town to pay me a visit : " and,
 " my dear madam, if she had gone
 " to you when that low-bred fellow sir
 " William Coniers was making love to
 " her, we should not have been at all
 " surpris'd. Her going a day or two
 " after him gave rise to suspicions that
 " she was gone to him. She seem'd to
 " be unhappy, lost that agreeable cheer-
 " fulness for which she was remark-
 " able, and grew pale and solitary ; in
 " short, she put me in mind of Shake-
 " speare's beautiful description of a wo-
 " man in love :

" She sat like Patience on a monument
 " Smiling at grief."

" I know her disposition, lady Cor-
 " bet," said I, " her patience, her
 " fine feelings ; and Coniers is a hand-
 " some young man, and a man without
 " vice ;

“vice; if she had liked him, why not
“marry? there was nothing to prevent
“her; and I am convinced, that it must
“have been something very extraordi-
“nary which induced her to take this
“step.” I took leave of the friendly
“lady Corbet, who promised that if she
“heard the slightest circumstance re-
“specting Matilda, she would inform
“me of it. Nothing transpired; but
“lady Corbet wrote to me, and said,
“that lady Coniers had been very in-
“dustrious in telling all her acquaint-
“ance that Matilda had followed her
“son to Ireland. She could not say
“she liked the girl; but if he were such
“a fool as to marry, she believed she
“could not forget that he was her son;
“for the workings of maternal tender-
“ness were so strong in her breast, that
“there was no resisting them. She had
“made up her mind to every thing, for
“her

“ her happiness was wrapped up in his.
“ As to Isabella Markham, she only
“ wished the queen knew what kind of
“ person she was; but the dreadful un-
“ happiness of people in her majesty’s
“ situation was, that every body about
“ them wore a mask, which they never
“ took off but when at a distance from
“ court; and then they could unblush-
“ ingly take their friends jewels to set
“ off their persons, and, she did not
“ make a doubt, keep them for ever as
“ their own.

“ Happily, this story was sometimes
“ told unguardedly to those who were
“ frequently at court, and to some who
“ had offices there. Lady Coniers was
“ likewise so well known in her neigh-
“ bourhood, that the good people seldom
“ attended much to her when she did
“ speak the truth; fortunately too, I
“ was

“ was not rich enough to purchase jewels,
 “ and therefore was never seen to wear
 “ any ; for my mother prudently turned
 “ the few she was possessed of into
 “ money, which she divided between
 “ my younger brother and myself.

“ A period of, I believe, twenty years
 “ has slipped away, and I have never
 “ heard of my dear Matilda Devereux.
 “ She did not go to Ireland, as I could
 “ learn from my inquiries ; neither did
 “ she marry sir William Coniers. —
 “ Her rents I have regularly received,
 “ and hoarded up the money. If I
 “ should ever see her again, there it is
 “ for her ; or, when I am assured of her
 “ death, I will pay it into the hands of
 “ Mr. Devereux, her nearest relation as
 “ to blood ; for I think I informed you
 “ that the Devereux’s estate went to a
 “ very distant relation. The title fell
 “ with

“ with her father, and was given to the
 “ family of Capel.

“ You may suppose, my dear children,
 “ that the greatest pleasure I could enjoy
 “ would be to find the friend of my
 “ youth alive, virtuous, and happy. Yet
 “ I dare not flatter myself that such an
 “ event can be possible. Sir Philip
 “ Sidney’s *Arcadia* was one of the ele-
 “ gant presents she made me when we
 “ lived so happily together; and now
 “ that my narrative is ended, let us hear
 “ it; for it will entertain you, and be
 “ gratifying to me.”

“ Robert began reading, and they all
 attended for three hours, when other
 avocations called upon them. — Time
 wore slowly away, in expectation of
 hearing from my lord; a few days
 brought a special messenger to say,
 that

that queen Anne of Denmark was dead, and the king in great affliction; that a party had been raised in favour of lady Arabella Stuart, whom they wanted for their queen; that lady Arabella had written a letter to the king, and discovered the plot; that affairs were a little quieted; but that he should not be able to fix any time for returning to his family, which he much lamented.

After dinner the family were conversing with Mr. Butler and Mr. Fairfax upon these events, and the former was expatiating upon the miseries of a country when the people at large thought wrong, and the dreadful mischiefs which must in that case fall upon every individual; when Mr. Fairfax took occasion to observe, that it would not matter if they were to rise; for it was very likely we might do better without any parliament.

parliament. The house of lords was certainly an incumbrance, and the nation would undoubtedly be better without them. And as to kings, what were they? nothing. — “Sir,” replied Mr. Butler, “there have been kings ever since the creation of the world; you will find I am correct in what I advance, if you will consult your bible.” — “It may be so, sir,” returned Mr. Fairfax; “but the world, sir, is more enlightened; it is grown wiser, and will improve every day; for we have gone on so long in the old track, that it is time to open a new one; and I think I can see the change approaching.”

Lady Harrington inclined her head on one side, as if she doubted her powers of hearing; and at last, being out of patience

patience with such doctrines, spoke to him firmly, but without passion :

“ Mr. Fairfax, I am surpris'd, and
 “ can hardly credit what I have just
 “ heard you utter. If these were your
 “ principles, why did you enter this
 “ house? you have not learnt them
 “ here.”—“ No, madam,” he replied;
 “ I brought them with me.”—“ Then,
 “ I beg, sir, you will take them back
 “ again. I find your head is turned;
 “ you are mad in one point; that settled
 “ gloom which I have ever observed
 “ hang over you, and which your coun-
 “ tenance and manner were unable to
 “ conceal, was the gloom of discontent;
 “ you embrace new doctrines in hope
 “ to be advanced in the world. If you
 “ had taken orders, my lord might pro-
 “ bably have been of some service to
 “ you;

“ you; but I do not doubt [*looking at*
“ *Mr. Butler*] that he will find proper
“ subjects for his church-preferment.
“ I have this opinion of my family, that
“ the improper notions you choose to
“ cherish have had no ill effect upon
“ them; though you came here, I sup-
“ pose, as a missionary to convert us to
“ the new light. So far, I am happy,
“ that you have enlightened me to wish
“ to part with you.—You shall receive
“ from me whatever is due; and as the
“ last favour, I request you will depart
“ from the Abbey this evening.” The
money was paid, and Fairfax walked off
without a bow.

“ I did not think there could be such
“ a man in the world,” said Elizabeth;
“ what can he mean?”—“ Is he not
“ drunk?” asked Matilda. “ No,” re-
plied lady Harrington, “ not with wine;
“ but

“ but intoxicated with a much stronger
 “ thing, ambition. That man, were he
 “ a prebendary would be miserable till
 “ he should be a dean, and then unhappy
 “ till he became archbishop of Canter-
 “ bury. As a layman, he would wish
 “ to govern nations, and would rule
 “ them with a rod of iron. When dis-
 “ content lays its strong talons upon the
 “ minds of men, it is seldom removed
 “ but with life; it preys upon their
 “ happiness, like the grub at the root of
 “ a plant; and nothing but taking it
 “ up, cutting out the affected part, and
 “ replanting it in another soil, can give
 “ any chance for a cure.”—“ But do
 “ you think, my dear madam,” said
 Robert, “ that it could be so replanted?”
 —“ I am not quite sure that it could;
 “ yet for instance, if the king were to
 “ send for him, compliment his abilities,
 “ give him an office of emolument, and

“add titles to those honours, he would
“think the present the best times that
“could happen. But when he found
“the difficulty of filling his situation
“with dignity, and that his time and his
“ease must be entirely given up to
“public business, he would be fatigued;
“he would become a tyrant to those
“below him; he would find that his
“former habits of life made his present
“situation more uneasy; his mind would
“again sicken at finding the misery of
“what he was, and at the same time
“be too weak to return to what he had
“been. It is not in the nature of such
“minds to be satisfied.”

Lady Harrington questioned her sons, whether they were acquainted with Mr. Fairfax's principles. The eldest said, that at first Mr. Fairfax did not speak out, and therefore he did not com-

prehend him; when he did, he told that gentleman that he was sure those ideas were opposite to every thing his father wished him to learn; and he thought himself that Virgil and Horace were much pleasanter studies than such subjects. “And what did you say to him, John!”—“Why, I told him that he was mad, and burst into a laugh, which made him angry; he would then call me a dunce, and tell me to go out of the room, which was precisely what I wanted.”

The following week a messenger arrived from lord Harrington, to say, that the king had appointed lady Harrington to be governess to the princess Elizabeth; that he was engaging proper people to be sent down to get the east front of the Abbey in order for her royal highness's reception; that no person of
consequence

consequence was to remain with her; that lady Lisle was to attend her down, and stay at Coombe till she was settled; and he hoped that she would be prepared in a month to receive her royal pupil.

Lady Harrington found this a thing she both liked and disliked. The consequence it gave her in the world was flattering to her ambition; but the charge of such an undertaking was inimical to her ease. She was now advancing "into the vale of years;" but had good health, and was of a lively turn of mind.—Yet, having a kind of court in her house must be a great fatigue, which she had much rather have had nothing to do with.—Luckily for her, it was not left to her choice; the princess was preparing to come; she must receive her; and, as that was the

case, she was entirely left without a negative in the business, and of consequence had an undoubted right to complain, if it was disagreeable to her.

The family was in a great bustle for a fortnight; numberless questions were asked, and not one half of them could be answered. Lady Harrington's mind was so fully occupied, that to answer inquiries was a torment, instead of a pleasure, as formerly. Being one day extremely out of humour with the workmen, who were, as is not uncommon, making their job as long as they could, by doing as little as possible, her eldest son suddenly asked her, if the king was not a man of learning. "No," she replied, "I think not."—"Then, madam, your opinion seems to be very different from that of the rest of the people with whom I have conversed;
" for

“ for they all assured me, that he was
“ very much so.” — “ Yes, yes, Ro-
“ bert,” returned lady Harrington, “ his
“ learning is like that of some others
“ whom I know ; it is a parcel of old
“ lumber thrown about a house, against
“ which every one is stumbling, and
“ which is of no sort of use, even to the
“ owner.” — “ I fancy, madam,” he
replied, “ you must have met with
“ something unpleasant of that sort.” —
“ I have,” she said, rubbing her elbow,
“ fallen over an old bedstead and hurt
“ myself ; and the consequence is, that
“ I have ordered the housekeeper to
“ collect every thing of that kind to-
“ gether, and divide it between the two
“ maids who are to be married to Ralph
“ and Harry.” — “ A lucky hit for
“ them,” said John, bursting into laugh-
ter. — “ Well,” returned lady Har-
rington gravely, “ I must step into the

“ antechamber, for I believe those
 “ hangings will never be put up; they
 “ have been about them these three
 “ days.”

Preparations went on for the reception
 of the princess; and lord Harrington sent
 for his sons, desiring that they might be
 accompanied to London by Mr. Butler
 who was appointed her royal highness
 chaplain at the Abbey. The morning
 being fine, lady Harrington and her
 daughters went to the parsonage, to in-
 form the good man of it. He expressed
 himself unworthy of the honour; but
 as it was the wish of lord Harrington,
 he would go; yet he thought that his
 age was against such a scheme. “ Age,”
 said my lady; “ what is age, my good
 “ sir? You have no infirmities.”—“ Ma-
 “ dam,” he replied, “ I am sensible of
 “ a great many *mental* ones.”—“ Indeed,
 “ my

“ my lady,” said Mrs. Butler, “ your
“ ladyship is quite right ; and so is my
“ husband too, for he does not ail any
“ thing at all that I know of ; I am sure
“ he is as hale and fit for a journey as
“ any man can be ; only, as he says, he
“ has many *mortal* infirmities ; and so
“ we have all, from the time we know
“ any thing, to the time we leave this
“ wicked world.”

The ladies made a short visit, and returned to the Abbey. “ Well, my dear,” said Mrs. Butler, “ this is something like ; we stand a good chance of being somebody now. — Only think of parson Butler’s being sent for to court. I warrant the whole county will ring of nothing else for months and months to come.”

Robert Harrington felt no great pleasure in the thoughts of a court ; but

John's spirits were so volatile, that he did not know what to do with himself. At length the happy morning came, and they took their leave.

Elizabeth wished for the arrival of the princess; Matilda wondered whether her highness resembled any person she was acquainted with; — and lady Harrington was anxious to have every thing in proper order to receive her. — Another week completed all the improvements; lady Harrington then found her mind at ease, and could converse with her daughters as cheerfully and good-humouredly as before.

“I wish,” said Miss Harrington,
“that I could know the princess's dis-
“position. Do you know her, ma-
“dam? Is she grave or gay?” —
“That

“That is impossible for me to tell,”
returned lady Harrington; “but, ac-
“cording to report, she is very ami-
“able.” — “Was your royal mistress
“handsome?” asked Matilda. “You
“used to tell us, madam, that we should
“hear a great deal about her when our
“judgments were a little matured.”

“If you wish to hear what I have
“observed of that great queen, I will
“inform you; but I am afraid I shall
“be rather diffuse upon the subject.

“Queen Elizabeth was what might
“be called an old woman when first I
“had the honour of attending her.—
“Her person was rather above the
“middle size as to height, but not to
“be called tall;—muscular, but not
“fat;—her face fair, and a perfect oval.
“—She had small black eyes; her

“ nose a little aquiline; her hand and
“ fingers very long and taper, and her
“ air and manner extremely majestic.
“ No mortal ever spoke better in public.
“ In different languages, she gave the
“ proper emphasis to every word; and
“ whatever was the subject of her dis-
“ course, it had the same propriety.—
“ Politics she considered as her first
“ study, which was the good of her
“ subjects at large, and the aggrandize-
“ ment of her kingdom in particular.—
“ She loved peace, encouraged arts,
“ manufactures, and commerce; and if
“ any foreign power encroached upon
“ her, she insisted on concessions, or
“ made war immediately, and always
“ preferred the latter, saying that the
“ first blow, well-directed, was half the
“ battle; and she was always prepared.
“ She did not like that her soldiers and
“ seamen should be unemployed, for she
“ used

“ used to say, they would rust and be
“ good for nothing. She was extremely
“ fond of military shows. When the
“ Spanish Armada threatened the coun-
“ try with invasion, she went to the
“ army assembled at Tilbury, and, to
“ inspire the men with courage, made
“ a speech to them from the drumhead,
“ which had a good effect. Her mind
“ was firm and intrepid; and she never
“ gave up any thing when once she had
“ formed her resolutions, which an hour’s
“ privacy in her closet would enable her
“ to do. To matters of business which
“ came suddenly forward she would
“ speak at once, without hesitation.
“ The people loved her, and at the
“ same time feared her; the former
“ they would have been ungrateful if
“ they *had not* done, and the latter she
“ took care they *should* do. She under-
“ stood music perfectly, and was fond

“ of romantic actions, tilts and tourna-
“ ments, and pageants where virtues and
“ vices were personified. — Extremely
“ prudent in the expenditure of the
“ public money, she always regretted
“ the expence war brought with it, and
“ frequently said, “ My people are so
“ liberal of themselves, that I ought to
“ take care of their money.” She was
“ very particular in keeping every one
“ in his proper place and situation; and
“ did not like that the middle ranks
“ should step too near the nobility; at
“ the same time she was extremely en-
“ raged when she found any of her
“ nobility degrading themselves. Every
“ man, she observed, might wish to
“ climb, it was a laudable ambition;
“ but that men who were high should
“ like to lower themselves, was what
“ she could not comprehend.

“ I must

“ I must conclude my account with
“ telling you, that this great queen was
“ a woman, and in some instances less
“ than a woman. She was extrava-
“ gantly fond of being personally ad-
“ mired long after her personal charms
“ were flown; sending frequently to
“ France for fashions, and being so mi-
“ nutely particular concerning her dress,
“ that I used to be surpris'd how her
“ mind could descend to such petty
“ trifles, at a time when it was engaged
“ in such important business.”

“ We are much obliged to you, my
“ dear madam,” said Miss Harrington,
“ for the account you have given us of
“ this extraordinary woman. Is king
“ James like the queen?”—“ If he be,”
said Matilda, “ I have a very great
“ respect for him.”—“ You ought to
“ respect him,” said lady Harrington;
“ his

“ his situation demands it. But king
“ James is very unlike my royal mistress;
“ he has a great aversion to war, and is
“ eternally patching up peace with other
“ nations by means of money, which is
“ giving the strength out of his own
“ into the enemy’s hands. He prides
“ himself upon that which is only pro-
“ per for a country schoolmaster, and
“ which the schoolmaster might gain
“ some credit by, a kind of pedantic
“ learning. He has no idea of the
“ value of money, but distresses himself
“ by lavishing it upon his favourites.”

“ Then,” said Matilda, the colour
flushing into her face, “ why does my
“ father obey his summons? for I would
“ not.” — “ If you considered well, you
“ most certainly would. The king is a
“ man without ambition, and is consti-
“ tutionally fearful; but he is far from
“ being

“ being a tyrant, and is certainly a man
“ of peace. Were you to think always
“ as you did five minutes since, what
“ would the country at large do? what
“ would individuals suffer? you must
“ support the king and the laws of your
“ country, for the king and the laws sup-
“ port you. — Suppose, for instance,
“ that we had no king, some tyrant, with
“ a strong hand, would break through
“ the laws and govern us with severity
“ and oppression. He *must* do it, be-
“ cause being in a situation that he had
“ no *right* to, he *must* maintain it by
“ force. Now we will suppose this
“ nation to be governed by a certain
“ number of men, we will, for argu-
“ ment’s sake, say fifty. These fifty
“ would have a hundred different plans,
“ and every individual would be pulling
“ whichever way his inclination led him;
“ the ambitious endeavouring to rule
“ the

“ the rest, and the avaricious filling
“ their own private coffers.”

“ I stand corrected, my dear madam,”
said Matilda ; “ these were circum-
“ stances to which I had not adverted ;
“ and therefore it was foolish in me to
“ give my opinion of the matter.” —
“ Not at all foolish in mentioning them
“ to me,” replied lady Harrington, “ be-
“ cause I am always happy when I can
“ set you right ; and it is of great conse-
“ quence to you, that you should say to
“ me exactly what you think ; but had
“ you said this to strangers, they would
“ either have laughed at your folly, or
“ encouraged your ignorance, which will
“ always be the case when people give
“ their opinions upon what they do not
“ understand. — Take my advice then ;
“ frequently ask questions for informa-
“ tion ; if you do not comprehend the
“ answers,

“ answers, apply to some sure friend,
“ like myself, to explain them.”

A messenger arrived the next day, from lord Harrington, to inform them that the princess Elizabeth was to set out in a coach and travel as far as the roads would permit, when her royal highness was to mount her horse and proceed. My lord desired that lady Harrington and her daughters would mount theirs, and meet her twenty miles from the Abbey, to pay their duty. They accordingly provided themselves, their waiting gentlewomen, and serving men, with palfreys, and set out in state. In the evening they met the princess, who received them very graciously, and the Harringtons were very happy. They accompanied her royal highness next day to the Abbey, where she was well pleased with her apartments. Lady
Lise

Lisle was the only person of consequence who came with her ; and being an old friend of lady Harrington's, it was a great gratification to see her. She was to remain six weeks at the Abbey, to see the princess properly settled, and then return to her own family.

Mr. Butler got his chaplain's scarf, and a pecuniary appointment, but was not, as his family expected, a bishop, nor a dean ; he was not even canon of Windsor nor of Westminster. However, it would, it must come, and the scarf was a certain signal that future honours and emoluments were approaching. His daughters were now no longer young, but took great pains with themselves, and threw off at least ten years by their present juvenile appearance. They disdained the Coventry beaux ; and it was considered as a gross affront
if

if a young yeoman in the neighbourhood ventured to send looks of admiration at church. — But Mrs. Butler could not put herself out of her way. She gathered up the eggs, and inspected the brewery and dairy. To give her due praise, nobody could have better puddings, ale, or butter; and it was a great gratification to her, when the labour of the day was over, to sit herself down in her armed chair, and talk of her royal highness's chaplain: with great enjoyment she would say to her only maid-servant, "Tell her royal highness's chaplain, that the toast and ale will be as dead as ditch-water if he does not come quickly."

Mr. Butler, for want of spirit, as his wife and daughters were often heard to declare, went on in the domestic way as before; dug in his garden; inspected his cattle; cultivated his flowers; and
entirely

entirely disregarded all the hints which were thrown out, that such employments were beneath the dignity of her royal highness's chaplain. — Meeting his wife one very warm morning, fatigued to death, with an old duck in her hand, and a lapful of young ones, he said, “ I think, “ my dear, you are doing that which is “ very degrading to her royal highness's “ chaplain.” — “ What !” exclaimed Mrs. Butler ; “ here have I been toiling “ and moiling these two hours to get “ this duck out of the village pond, “ and was forced to give some children “ a penny to assist me ; and here are “ fifteen as fine young ducklings as ever “ were hatched ; they will be worth “ money by and by.” — “ I myself “ think,” replied Mr. Butler, “ that you “ are perfectly right ; but I was surprised “ you did not find out, that it was a de- “ gradation to her royal highness's chap- “ lain's

“lain’s wife.” — “Fiddle fiddle! am
“I to lose my money because you are
“her royal highness’s chaplain? No, no,
“my daughters will want more every
“day. Consider what starching of ruffs
“comes to, for they must wear them
“now that you are her royal highness’s
“chaplain.”

The lively John Harrington had got a cornetcy of horse, had been learning the military exercise, and was quite in his element, swaggering, and entertaining his sisters with conversations upon the sword and matchlock. He had several books upon the subject, which he wanted to read aloud and explain to them; but as they did not seem at all interested in the business, he kept his military learning to himself.

The princess won the hearts of the family by her affability and condescension ; she was extremely fond of conversing with lady Harrington's daughters, and was always attended by them when she went out. Robert was improved by his journey to London ; at times he was cheerful and volatile, and then again busied in profound melancholy. This was observed by lord and lady Harrington ; but, as he seemed in health, they forbore to notice it. He sought solitude, and would hide himself in the woods for several hours together. His sisters were concerned, but could not account for the change ; they were perpetually inquiring after his health, but could not develop the cause of his disorder. One day Miss Harrington said, " Bidget step into the library, and inquire after my brother Robert ; I have not seen him to-day, and am afraid he is not well."

••••• Bless

“ Bless his honour,” said Bridget,
“ he is well enough, only a little troubled
“ with the heart-ach.” — “ What do
“ you mean ?” — “ Why, young lady,
“ the folks say that he is in love ; but
“ that is no such great matter ; the com-
“ plaint is common enough, and every
“ one is liable to it one time or another.”
— “ But with whom is he in love ?” asked
Matilda. — “ Why, it is the greatest
“ secret that ever was, but it is true
“ indeed.” — “ Impossible !” cried Miss
Harrington ; “ Robert is, of all people,
“ the least likely to fall in love.” —
“ That don’t signify, young lady, it may
“ be impossible, for aught I know ; but
“ it is true for all that.” — “ Do tell us,
“ Bridget,” said Matilda. — “ Why,
“ you know, young ladies, that I have
“ heard my lady say often and often
“ enough to you, ‘ Never wish to have
“ a secret ; but if you are trusted, never
“ tell

“ tell it again ;’ and as you will, I am
“ sure, follow my lady’s rules, I may
“ tell it. Then [*in a low voice*] Mr.
“ Sims, my lord’s man, who went to
“ London with him, told me, that a
“ friend of his who keeps a shop in the
“ Strand, said, that he was told by lady
“ Lisle’s housekeeper, that young lord
“ Harrington was, as sure as fate, in love
“ with lady Lisle’s eldest daughter.” —
“ Well,” said Miss Harrington, after a
pause, “ there is no great harm, if it be
“ so.” — “ Neither sin nor harm that I
“ can see in the matter,” said Bridget ;
“ but very much to the young gentle-
“ man’s credit, I think for my part.”

“ But as you seem so much in the
“ secret, is he to marry her ?” —
“ That, young lady, I could never find
“ out ; I have inquired, but to no pur-
“ pose ;

“poſe; though they ſay folks never
“marry their firſt love.”

“No!” ſaid Miſs Harrington. “No,
“never,” replied Bridget; “it is a
“thing I never heard of in my life,
“except among kings and princes; they
“do ſuch things; but I never heard of
“any body elſe; nay, ſometimes it is
“the third, fifth, ſeventh, or ninth,
“which laſt number is very lucky in-
“deed; but it is always an odd number,
“you may depend upon that.” — “And
“pray,” ſaid Matilda, “how far have
“you got in your numbers?” — “Juſt
“turned of the eighth, young lady; it
“would not do; I am a different per-
“ſon ſince the princeſs came here; and
“they cannot ſuppoſe that I will demean
“myſelf now.” — “We do not want
“to know your ſecrets; but tell us how
VOL. I. I “you

“ you felt when you was first in love,
 “ that we may know the symptoms when
 “ it comes upon us.”

“ Indeed,” returned Bridget, “ I felt
 “ enough of the smart to remember it.
 “ One minute, as hot as burning coals ;
 “ the next, as cold as clay. At one time,
 “ your heart feels as big as a lion’s ; at
 “ another, less than a pigeon’s ; and you
 “ are I-don’t-know-howish, and very
 “ disagreeable company to other folks ;
 “ just like my young lord here, pittering
 “ and pining, and just ready to die away
 “ at the smell of cowslips and violets ;
 “ neglecting your victuals and every
 “ thing else, till you are quite an ottamy,
 “ a perfect bag of bones, with no more
 “ colour than a dishclout.” — “ And
 “ who could be so cruel as to reduce you
 “ to such a condition, Bridget ?” —
 “ Why, lady, a carpenter’s son, who
 “ lived

“lived near my father’s in Essex.” —
“And why did not you marry him?” —
“Why, my poor mother, who is now
“dead and gone, said it would never be
“a match, because in the first place he
“was my first love ; and in the second, I
“was in love with him, and he was in
“love with Peggy Tubs ; and so, sure
“enough, it all went off.” — “Well,”
replied Matilda, “your mother must
“have been a very clever person to
“judge so nicely ; but you have had
“good health since you lived with us,
“and that must have been twenty years.”
“Oh yes,” said Bridget, “when the first
“brunt is over, it never hurts you
“after ; but the first is bad enough of
“all conscience ; misery enough ; but I
“never knew any body that died of the
“disorder, though songs and stories say
“so much about it. Ah, I never will
“believe it till I see it with my own
“eyes ;

“eyes; it hurts only the heart; and it
 “does not signify, for the scar cannot
 “be seen; it is no eye-fore, and so who
 “is the wifer?”

“Very true, Bridget,” said Miss
 Harrington; “scars upon the heart can-
 “not be seen by the most minute ob-
 “server; if they could, scars, I am
 “afraid, would be often seen, and not
 “proceed from love neither.”

“But, shall I go to my young lord,
 “and inquire how he does?” —
 “Yes,” said Miss Harrington. — She
 soon returned: “As sure as I am alive,
 “young ladies,” said Bridget, “I have
 “found it out.” — “Found what out?”
 demanded Matilda. “Why, all the
 “love,” said Bridget; “for after I had
 “inquired how he did, with your love
 “and

“ and commendations, I saw our lady
“ and lady Lisle through the window
“ walking in the garden. So, said I to
“ myself, that lady Lisle is a sweet,
“ handsome woman, said I ; but I think
“ Miss, her eldest daughter, will make
“ two such as her for beauty. Oh, she
“ was the sweetest poppet that ever I
“ saw !”

“ What said Mr. Robert ?” — “ Please
“ your honour,” says I, “ lady Lisle’s
“ waiting-gentlewoman told me, that
“ Miss Mary Lisle, her ladyship’s el-
“ dest daughter, is so very extraordinary
“ beautiful, that there is half a dozen
“ different lords and knights begging at
“ her feet for mercy every day.” — “ I
“ am afraid so, Bridget,” says his honour
with a terrible deep sigh ; “ but I
“ am writing, Bridget ;” and then he
took up a pen ; “ and cannot talk ;
“ so

“so tell my sisters I am much obliged
“to them for their inquiries.”

Bridget's history amused the young people ; but they were not so sure of the fact as the waiting-gentlewoman. They were determined, however, to watch their brother.

The Princess seemed to be happy in her situation, and did every thing that lady Harrington recommended to her. The time was approaching for lady Lisle's return to London. — One evening, after the Princess had retired to rest, lady Harrington and lady Lisle were sitting together, happy in each other's company, and chatting over stories of the old court. “I would give,” said my mother, “a great deal, if I could
“hear of a friend, who you may remem-
“ber was brought up by my mother ;
“for

“ for it has been said that she left lady
“ Coniers in a strange way, and followed
“ her son, sir William Coniers, to Ire-
“ land; but I believe no such thing;
“ I knew her well, and flattered myself
“ that she was the last person in the
“ world to do wrong. — My dear ma-
“ dam, did you ever hear any thing
“ concerning her ?”

“ Perhaps,” said lady Lisle, “ I ought
“ not to tell you what I have heard, as
“ it is not to her advantage, and as you,
“ my dear lady Harrington, are so much
“ her friend.” — “ Yes, let me hear the
“ worst that can be said; for I am afraid
“ I shall still retain my opinion.” — “ I
“ can give no information from my own
“ knowledge,” said lady Lisle; “ what-
“ ever I may say proceeds entirely from
“ reports, which, however, I have not
“ heard contradicted.” — “ Alas!” re-

turned lady Harrington, "she has no friend but myself; surely she might have found me; but tell me, my dear madam, what the world have said upon the subject."

"I never saw her," said lady Lisle; "but all agreed that she was a paragon of beauty. It was suspected that she was the daughter of the old lord Essex, but I never heard her mother named; that sir William Coniers was inclined to marry her, but that his mother was absolutely against it, and sent him to Ireland to be out of her way; that she followed him, and lived as his mistress; and what became of her afterwards I never heard. Then another story is, that she left lady Coniers in a clandestine manner, met some young man of fashion, whose name I never heard, lived with him,
"and

“ and died in an obscure lodging in
“ London.—Again, I heard that her
“ conduct was so very improper, that
“ Mr. Devereux, her relation, had
“ insisted upon her leaving England;
“ that she turned catholic, and was in a
“ convent in France; that Mr. Deve-
“ reux, upon condition that she secluded
“ herself, gave her a pension; but this
“ was not true; for I spoke to him upon
“ the subject, and he did not even know
“ her personally.”

“ I may trust you, my friend,” said
lady Harrington, “ by saying that I have
“ a fortune of my Matilda’s in my hands,
“ which I will keep for her. When I
“ am assured of her death, I will give it
“ into Mr. Devereux’s hands, as the
“ nearest relation; and you will do me
“ a singular favour, my dear madam, if
“ you will make inquiries concerning
“ her

“ her on your return to town, and in-
“ form me of your success; for I am
“ not easy in having the care of other
“ people’s money; but I will not give
“ it out of my hands till I am assured of
“ her death; when Mr. Devereux, I
“ hope, will acknowledge that I have
“ been a faithful steward.”—“ Mr. De-
“ vereux,” replied lady Lisle, “ is a very
“ respectable gentleman, though not
“ very rich; and I am sure would not
“ wish you to do any such thing; for,
“ in fact, he has very little right to it,
“ and I believe the law would not give
“ it him.”—“ If it did not,” said lady
Harrington, “ he should have it.”

Lady Lisle took her departure at the time fixed, and the princess was left entirely under the care of lady Harrington. Her highness was sensible, meek, extremely well-disposed, and for twelve months

months every person in the Abbey was happy, except lady Harrington. The thoughts of Matilda Devereux gave her continual pain; and the fatigue she went through was, to a person of her age, who loved ease and retirement, ill compensated by the honour she received. — It was not that sort of ease which is so apt to degenerate into laziness, that she liked; — but what is more properly termed leisure, or a command of her time, — which she now had not; yet she was perfectly alive to every thing around her, and to the minutest trifle which concerned the princess or her family. — What allowed her attention to be so particular was, that she never in the smallest degree troubled herself about the private affairs of her neighbours; she visited them, but knew nothing of their concerns, except they wanted her advice or assistance. — But, to confess

the truth, I verily believe it gave her no pleasure to hear gossiping stories, not one fourth of which are ever true; and as that was the case, it did not require a cunning man to find out the reason of her not troubling herself about them.

One very stormy night in the beginning of November, when the whole family were buried in sleep, a sounding of horns and trampling of horses were heard at the postern-gate of the Abbey; a loud knocking awakened the drowsy porter, who received from an officer on horseback orders to deliver a letter to lord Harrington immediately. My lord read it with agitation; he arose, went down, and desired the officer might be admitted. When he entered, "I think, sir," said lord Harrington, "I have the honour of seeing the earl of
" Oxford's

“Oxford’s son, colonel Vere.” The colonel bowed, and answered, “You are, I suppose, sir, lord Harrington, master of Coombe Abbey; and the princess Elizabeth is here.”—“Certainly, sir,” said his lordship; “and this note, which I have had the honour of receiving from the king, merely says, that he has sent you, as a person in whom he places great confidence, with a troop of horse; and for farther particulars refers me to you. I am, as you see, extremely agitated; but it proceeds from the anxiety I feel upon my royal master’s account.”—“My message,” returned the colonel, “will not be long, but will be unpleasant: it is this: a plot has been providentially discovered, which was to have blown up the parliament by means of gunpowder. The king and prince Charles were to have been
“murdered,

“ murdered, and the princess Elizabeth
 “ set upon the throne.”—“ And who
 “ were concerned in this diabolical plot?”
 —“ Grey, Cobham, and Raleigh; but
 “ the instrument in the hands of these
 “ men was one Guy Vaux or Faux.
 “ Such is the outline of the affair; and
 “ the king, my lord, fearing that the
 “ country might rise, at the instigation
 “ of those people, and seize the princess,
 “ has sent me down to protect her, and
 “ to request that I may have ground set
 “ out in your park for barracks for my
 “ horse; as my orders are, to be as near
 “ the princess as possible, to keep a good
 “ guard, and do every thing that you
 “ with me may think proper for the
 “ purpose.” Lord Harrington assented,
 in the morning the ground was marked
 out for the barracks, and workmen be-
 gan to erect them.

Lady

Lady Harrington and the family were in extreme agitation the whole day; and when her ladyship informed the princess of the business, she burst into a flood of tears, and exclaimed, "What! will they murder my father and brother to make me a queen? You know, lady Harrington, that I cannot govern myself." — "Your royal highness," returned lady Harrington, "need not fear being queen at present. Your father and brother are living; and the discoveries which have been made will, I hope, effectually restore tranquillity."

The accommodations for the horse were soon completed, and every thing remained quiet for some months, except Bridget, who declared that she was frightened out of her wits, and should never be happy again; no, not if she lived

lived to be a hundred; for she was afraid when she went to bed, that she should be murdered before morning. She screamed violently at the sight of a drawn sword; and once, at the report of an arquebuse, really fainted away. She trotted about the house all day long; forgot every thing; had bad dreams,—and vowed she shook like an aspen-leaf when any of the people spoke to her.

One day, coming from church, they saw a multitude of people assembled in the park. Lord Harrington went up to them, and inquired the reason of their coming in such crowds. They told him, that the king and prince were both dead, and they were come to see and wish queen Elizabeth joy on her accession to the crown. Lord Harrington assured them, that the king and
prince

prince were both in good health ; but he would request the princess to let them see her, provided they conducted themselves properly. They promised ; and lord Harrington went to prepare the princess, who seemed extremely averse to speaking to them, and exclaimed in an agony, “ Oh, my father, my brother ! they have murdered them, and will force a bloody crown upon me.” Lord Harrington assured her, that it was only the country people, who, having heard the rumour which had been circulated, wanted to pay their duty to her ; he could wish her royal highness would speak to them ; and hinting what he thought would be proper upon the occasion, she at length consented. This princess was not a beautiful woman, but extremely interesting. She was rather tall, her face pale, with a melancholy cast of countenance ; and her age at that time

time about eighteen. Colonel Vere drew out his horse and pikemen, and informed the people that they must be silent, for the princess would condescend to speak to them. The princess, lady Harrington, and her daughters, attended by lord Harrington and his sons, came to the place appointed. The princess was mounted on horseback, that she might be seen by the people, and lord Harrington held her bridle. The family stood around her, the people next, and they were surrounded by the horse. The princess began, and stopped; then recollecting and recovering herself, said in a tremulous voice:

“ I am very sorry, my good people,
“ that the report of the death of the king
“ my father, and the prince my bro-
“ ther, should have reached you. What
“ you have been told is not true; and I
“ persuade

“ persuade myself that I make you happy
“ by assuring you that they are both in
“ perfect health. I feel myself much
“ flattered by your attending upon me
“ in this manner, and will assure my
“ father of the loyalty and good wishes
“ of his faithful subjects in this part
“ of England, which cannot fail of be-
“ ing extremely agreeable to him.”

When the princess was silent, lord Harrington and his sons said, “ Long live the princess Elizabeth!” which was echoed and re-echoed by the people. Lord Harrington led her horse to the Abbey, and the crowd followed. As soon as she entered, barrels of ale and provisions were distributed among them; but the princess could not be prevailed upon to shew herself at the windows. The people enjoyed themselves in eating
and

and drinking, gave three cheers, and departed peaceably.

“Who would be a sovereign,” said the princess sighing, “when the misguided multitude will believe every thing they are told, and would pull down kingdoms, without thinking either of themselves or others? Surely the hand of the law and the edge of the sword ought to be severe upon them.”

“When your royal highness,” replied lady Harrington, “considers, that the people mean no harm, I am sure you will not wish them to be oppressed either by the law or the sword; they mean no mischief, and are loyal and good in themselves; but it is the ambitious and discontented who endeavour to work upon their feelings, and who inflame them by saying, that if
“ things

" things were different they might live
" at their ease. By this method they
" draw-in the unthinking multitude
" merely as tools for their diabolical
" purposes. At present your royal
" highness is held up as a second Eliza-
" beth; they are *told*, that they *must* be
" happier under your government than
" under any other; and they hold up
" some things that the late queen did in
" her progresses, which were nothing in
" themselves, but very popular with
" the people; for as she made the ge-
" nius of the English nation her parti-
" cular study, she endeavoured to flatter
" their feelings; and when I have heard
" her tell them that the English were
" the first and bravest nation in the
" world, they have shouted incessantly;
" and sometimes, when her majesty
" would speak to a crowd of the lowest
" order, she would tell them that she
" was

“ was assured there was not one among
“ them but could conquer four Spa-
“ niards ; and at that moment the weak-
“ est of them would have attempted it,
“ and perhaps, in their enthusiasm, would
“ have beaten them. But the French
“ and Spaniards are allowed to be *almost*
“ as brave as ourselves ; I cannot say
“ *quite so*, because I am so like the lower
“ orders of my countrymen that I will
“ not believe it possible. — I allow,” con-
“ tinued lady Harrington, “ that we are a
“ proud nation, from the duke to the
“ beggar ; for we have all an inherent
“ courage and consequence about us,
“ that I think nothing can get the better
“ of. It is in our air, our soil, our men,
“ our animals. Such, my princess, are
“ the English, which character I hope
“ will never be changed so long as the
“ world endures, either by false prin-
“ ciples or false polish.” — The prin-
“ cess

cess bowed assent to her governess's politics.

Queen Elizabeth's feat was a favourite with the princess; she frequently sat there, and the young Harringtons would present her with the finest flowers.—One day she said, “Lady Harrington, you have informed me of many things to which I was a stranger before. Do not you think that the English are passionately fond of flowers? for at all our court pageants we should make but a poor figure without the garlands. Their perfume is so grateful, the colours so bright, and the forms so beautiful! then I have observed in my rides about London on holidays, that the people constantly had their hands and bosoms filled with wild flowers, which they were, I suppose, conveying home to decorate their houses.

“houses. The same I have observed
“in the country; for there is hardly a
“cottage garden without its rosemary,
“lavender, roses, and gillyflowers.”

“Your observation is very correct,”
replied lady Harrington; “there is some-
“thing so fascinating in flowers, that they
“are cultivated and admired by all, and
“we must, whatever may be our situa-
“tion in life, be pleased with what is
“beautiful and natural. A handsome
“person is always admired, and some-
“times very much to the possessor’s dis-
“advantage, because it makes them
“vain. We see some very beautiful
“wild flowers, when taken from woods
“and heaths and planted in our gardens,
“languish and die, because nature never
“intended them for the soil; and though
“the gardener may make them grow by
“bringing the native earth with them,
“yet

“ yet they never thrive so well as on
“ the brow of the mountain, or in the
“ bosom of the wood. We are, ma-
“ dam, certainly designed by Provi-
“ dence for reasonable creatures; and,
“ although a handsome exterior, any
“ more than rank, is not of our own
“ bestowing, yet the world will pay
“ homage to them. The handsome
“ are flattered because beauty gives plea-
“ sure to those who behold it; but it is
“ of little use to the possessor. Power
“ ought to be obeyed, and will be when
“ the powerful exercise it properly.
“ Crimes must be punished, and virtue
“ rewarded, which can only be done by
“ those to whom power is delegated.
“ Riches, when the possessors can be per-
“ suaded to make a proper use of them,
“ are of infinite benefit to the poor and
“ industrious; the rich may, if they
“ please, make themselves a blessing to
“ VOL. I. K “ their

“their neighbourhood.—Money, every
“person feels, is necessary; but, I think,
“for the happiness of a private in-
“dividual; an “elegant sufficiency,” is a
“much more desirable blessing than a
“profusion; for when we see the rich fre-
“quently very miserable, we cannot help
“saying with a sigh, Riches can neither
“cure the head nor the heart ach.”

“Thank Providence!” said the prin-
cess, “I possess neither beauty, power,
“nor riches; if ever I should, lady
“Harrington, I hope not to forget what
“you have said upon the occasion.”

Colonel Vere paid great attention to
Miss Harrington, and looked as if he
hoped and feared; but the lady was
too honest to coquet it with him, and
conducted herself with an elegant polite-
ness as usual. One evening as she was
writing

writing in her closet, her brother came in rather abruptly, and threw himself into a chair. "What is the matter, Robert?" said Miss Harrington; "are you fatigued?" — "No," he replied; "I came to tell you a secret; but perhaps you are acquainted with it." — "Then it certainly is no secret; but come, out with this mighty affair." — "Why, I caught colonel Vere last night strolling in the woods by moonlight, and I do believe that he is in love with you, — with you, Elizabeth." — "With me? no such thing, I can assure you; he has never said a word about it; and, therefore, what reason can I have to think so?" — "Words," replied Robert, "are not always the surest indications of a love-sick swain; a man may be in love, yet unable to speak. — "Now I have found you out," replied Miss Harrington; "upon
K 2 " my

“ my word you are over head and ears ;
“ first, you wander to the woods and
“ listen to the nightingales, much more
“ than colonel Vere ; sigh ready to
“ break your heart ; nay, very frequently
“ talk to yourself ; and then you pay
“ such particular attention to lady Lisle,
“ that I really believe you are enamoured
“ of her. I wish you joy, for she is a fine-
“ looking woman, though an old one ;
“ and she will be no more than an old
“ woman twenty years hence.” — “ No,”
said Robert ; “ but I am in love with a
“ part of her.” — “ Her eyes are remark-
“ ably brilliant ; I never in my life saw a
“ woman with such a pair of eyes at fifty-
“ five.” — “ Nonsense !” he exclaimed.
“ No, no ; it is—it is her daughter that
“ I am in love with ; Miss Lisle has my
“ heart ; and if she will not give me hers
“ in exchange, I know not how to get
“ mine back again.” — “ Poor Robert !
“ shall

“shall I inform my father or my mother?” — “No, my dear Elizabeth; let me entreat you to keep it secret. My father has once or twice mentioned going to London in a few weeks; and I therefore defer it till I accompany him thither. — Be secret, dear Elizabeth, and adieu.”

A review of the horse one day brought all the gentry and every other person in the neighbourhood into the park; the princess, of course, was the principal figure upon this occasion; and the Harrington family attended her. When the business was over, the princess complimented the colonel upon the dexterity and good discipline of his regiment, and said, “Colonel Vere, I observed a man, who seemed higher than a common soldier, yet not so high as a subaltern, a remarkably well-
K 3 “looking

“looking man, with blue ribbands tied upon his left arm.”—“That man, madam,” replied the colonel, “is a serjeant, a very good soldier, and of course a favourite of mine.”—“But what means that ribband? Is it a badge of distinction from you?”—“No, madam,” returned the colonel, “that is a mark of favour from some fair damsel.” The princess smiled.

At the hour of retirement the sisters were talking of the review; and the gallant serjeant became the topic of their conversation. “He is in love, my lady,” said Bridget. “The favour was from Jenny Hawthorn, I suppose.”—“No,” replied Bridget, with her face like crimson; “he looks higher.”—“You are the fair damsel,” said Miss Harrington; “your countenance betrays you.”—“If you think I
“ am

“ am wrong, my dear ladies——” —
 “ Not at all, Bridget,” replied Matilda;
 “ and the serjeant must be a remark-
 “ ably clever man so soon to change
 “ your opinion, when you had such
 “ horrors concerning the soldiers, which
 “ you must now be sensible were un-
 “ founded.”

While the troops were quartered in the park John Harrington was in his element. He loved the parade of the tented field; he delighted in the neighing steed, and all the pomp and circumstance of war; he was indefatigable in the duty of a soldier; but careless and unthinking in every other respect. He was wrapped up in military achievements, and conversed and thought of scarcely any thing else; he wished to combat dangers, and would have rushed headlong into fire or water, with as little concern as he would have
 K 4 thrown

thrown himself down to sleep; fear and danger were words for which he had no meaning or use; they were banished his memory; he only regretted that he had not lived in the last century, or in the gallant reign of Elizabeth; was perpetually reading of that melancholy period of our history which describes the wars of York and Lancaster; envied of those times; but could never peruse the story of the fall of Margaret's gallant son, or the death of young Rutland, without an involuntary tear.

Lord Harrington saw the extreme rashness of his son with great concern, and wished to moderate it. He represented to him, that ferocity and true valour were distinct things; an officer, he said, should certainly lead his men gallantly to an attack, and encourage them

them as much as possible by his example; but to sacrifice their lives and his own by ill-timed rashness was shocking. He ought to be cool and considerate, and understand the ground he was upon, as well as that on all sides of him; rashness was always an advantage to the enemy; "and, my son," he added with a sigh, "I now tell you, what I hope will not happen during my life or yours: but I see with the greatest concern, that there is at present a set of restless spirits in this happy island, that want they know not what; they seem to wish for innovation, which is always extremely dangerous; but when I am gone, my son, be true to your king, and you will of course be true to your country and yourself. Respect its civil jurisdiction, and under every circumstance obey it. I have seen and read the history of many

K 5

" countries,

“ countries, and have found, for the
 “ good of the subject, none equal to
 “ our own. Therefore, reverence its
 “ laws and obey them.” John bowed
 and promised to follow his advice.

My lord walked out, ruminating upon
 what he had said to his son, and met
 colonel Vere, whom he knew to be a
 good soldier in every respect. He
 opened his heart to him, and expressed a
 thousand fears on account of his youngest
 son. The colonel heard all with won-
 derful patience ; and when my lord stop-
 ed, he said, “ I do not think your lordship
 “ ought to be at all alarmed at the con-
 “ duct of the cornet. He seems to me
 “ to be exactly the thing I could wish a
 “ youth to be in his situation. As to
 “ rashness, I dare say that in hunting he
 “ would rush through a pond rather than
 “ go round it ; but be assured, military
 “ discipline

“ discipline will keep him in order ; he
“ has a glorious spirit, and will be an
“ honour to his country. Let him feel
“ his situation, I mean let him be a pro-
“ per time learning to obey as a subal-
“ tern ; then let him remain as captain
“ two years before you wish him higher ;
“ but should he perform any service to
“ merit the applause of his country, or
“ the rewards of his sovereign, in that
“ case never wish to keep him back.
“ Recollect, my lord, what you were at
“ his age.” — “ I was much more in-
“ clined to the cabinet,” replied my
lord ; “ I did not like that extreme
“ bustle which must inevitably attend a
“ military life ; but the threatenings of
“ the Spaniards made me a soldier. I
“ was a captain under lord Hunsdon,
“ who had the immediate guard of her
“ majesty’s person ; and from my fenfa-
“ tions then, and even now that I feel

“ my arms enervated by time; I would
“ do my best to serve my sovereign and
“ guard my own rights, which is the
“ same thing. But war, my good sir,
“ always fills me with melancholy;
“ for we are on both sides destroying
“ the human species; we are taking
“ children from their aged parents;
“ tearing husbands from their families;
“ and laying whole countries waste, by
“ a science which one would think was
“ invented by the devil himself.”

“ Your lordship’s observations are
“ certainly true,” answered the colonel;
“ but all the inhabitants of creation
“ destroy each other. Animals of the
“ same species seem to have a rooted
“ hatred; you may see it in the lowest
“ order of beings. Yesterday I observ-
“ ed an unfortunate stranger hen who had
“ got into your poultry-yard; it was
“ not

“not feeding-time, and yet the whole
“family were in an uproar; the hen
“defended herself well, but would most
“certainly have been killed if one of the
“domestics had not rescued her.” —
“But, my dear colonel Vere, that was
“perfectly justifiable; the hen was an
“intruder, and mine considered her as
“coming to take possession of their do-
“mains, in which case they were cer-
“tainly right. It is the law of nature;
“the rooks, the bees, &c. have a cer-
“tain knowledge, instinct, or whatever
“you please to call it, of property.
“What I dislike is, when nations war for
“a little barren territory, which cannot
“be of any possible use to either of
“them.”

“Yet war, my lord, taken in another
“light,” replied the colonel, “is useful;
“it takes off the idle, the profligate, and
“the

“ the petty thief. Those may all make
“ good soldiers ; proper discipline will
“ make men think who never thought
“ before ; they may become good and
“ useful members of society ; and as your
“ lordship knows that wars have been
“ exercised between nations ever since
“ the beginning of time, I almost think
“ it a presumption not to suppose it
“ necessary.” — “ It may be so, sir,”
replied my lord, “ for I cannot prove
“ by any argument that it is not.”

Mr. Butler, by attending the princess, became a great favourite ; but he was not yet a bishop, to the utter astonishment of his wife and daughters.—They could not think the reason of it ; he that was tagging from morning till night to and fro, from the parsonage to the Abbey, and from the Abbey to the parsonage, had not got one single thing ; nothing
ON

on the earth but a scarf and a shabby pension. What could be the reason they could not divine; but to be sure it was, one way or other, the most unaccountable thing that ever happened, to have their father chaplain to her royal highness, who most likely would one time or other be queen; for they had heard a hundred times, that prince Charles had but a sickly constitution; and the people were so very fond of her royal highness, because her name was Elizabeth, that they should not wonder if her royal highness was made queen even against her royal highness's own consent.

However, these good gentlewomen were not quite in the secret; for the princess had desired lord Harrington to hint to Mr. Butler, that if any preferment should fall, which was agreeable

to

to him, he should say so, as she wished that so good a man should be better known in the world, and he should have her good wishes and recommendation to the king. Lord Harrington acquainted Mr. Butler with this gracious message, which he received with extreme gratitude, but said that he was too old and unambitious ; that he found himself over-rated by her royal highness's goodness ; that the honour of being her chaplain at the Abbey was the utmost of his wishes ; he was happy in the situation wherein Providence had placed him ; and having always lived above want, and below envy, he wished to die so, though at the same time he was extremely sensible of her goodness towards him. The princess was at first surpris'd, but could not help feeling the propriety of the answer ; and to confer some personal favour said, " I will go next Thursday to
" the

“ the parsonage, eat some of Mr. Butler’s fruit, and bring back a nose-gay.”

The report of this soon reached the parsonage; and the family, from the moment of its arrival, till the important Thursday, were all in a bustle. Such decking out of the windows and chimney pieces, and pulling out cushions worked by their grandmother, which had not seen the light for twenty years! Mrs. Butler was resolved to array herself in the identical gown she was married in, and to put on a very handsome thumb-ring. She declared the gown had never been worn but twice; its colour was a beautiful dark green, and it was made of true Genoa velvet. The thumb-ring formerly belonged to Mr. Butler’s father, a sober thriving citizen, and it fitted wonderfully well, having undergone a winding

winding within, which service was dexterously performed by her youngest daughter.

At length the day arrived, and the princess, attended by the family, walked to the parsonage. Mrs. Butler, who narrowly watched the approach of her royal guest from the garret window opposite the road, being determined to have the honour of opening the wicket-gate of the little court, which led to the parsonage, that Mr. Butler might not snatch it from her, kept her eyes fixed upon the road, being sure the princess would come with all her attendants on horseback, as she sometimes went to the nobility in the neighbourhood. As the princess, however, took a shady walk through the park, of course Mrs. Butler did not see her coming down the road; but hearing a little bustle in the fore court, she saw with infinite regret Mr.
Butler

Butler with the gate in his hand, and the princess entering. She got into the parlour when they had been in it about two minutes, and the princess was saying, "What a pretty little place, Mr. Butler!" "I do not wonder that you are so fond of it, it is so neat and so peaceful." — "May it please your royal highness," he returned, "I have lived many years here very happily." — "Now shew me your garden," said the princess; "and tell me which is your favourite part of it." He attended her to a bower, composed of eight elms planted in a circle, with honey-suckles winding round them, and sweet-briar growing as a hedge within. In the middle stood a table, with one leg let into the earth, of no very elegant fashion, and a circular wooden bench within the sweet-briar.

"I am not surprised, Mr. Butler," said the princess, "that this is your favourite
" favourite

“ yourite retreat,” [*sitting down at the same time upon the bench,*] “ for it is very
 “ delightful.” — “ I spend my mornings
 “ here, madam,” he replied, “ when the
 “ weather is fine, in reading, writing,
 “ and meditating, the only things I am
 “ good for.” — “ That,” observed the
 princess, “ is saying a great deal for
 “ yourself; for the greater part of the
 “ world cannot or will not do half so
 “ much. But did not you promise me
 “ some fruit? I should like to have it
 “ here.” — “ Bring the fruit, my dears,”
 said Mr. Butler to his daughters; “ and
 “ the flowers we collected this morning.”
 They withdrew, and brought them into
 the bower.

“ Dear me !” said Mrs. Butler to her
 husband in a whisper, while the princess
 was eating the fruit and conversing with
 lord and lady Harrington; “ dear me !
 “ won’t

"won't the princess have my worked
 "cushions to sit upon? Shall I fetch
 "them out of the parlour?" — "No,
 "my dear, the princess prefers sitting
 "here without them." — "Oh," said
 she in an agony, "I am quite ashamed;
 "ed; this place is in such a pickle, and
 "hardly fit for any Christian soul to come
 "into, much less her royal highness.
 "What a thing it is for such a person to
 "sit in such a place!" — "The princess
 "prefers it, my dear," returned Mr.
 Butler. "What does that signify?"
 said his wife; "I am half mad about it,
 "and shall be quite so in five minutes.
 "What shall I say to my neighbours?
 "They will think, nay, they must think
 "that my cushions were disdained by her
 "royal highness." — "Then tell them,
 "my dear, that the princess was in rap-
 "tures with this bower," said Mr.
 Butler. "I would not tell a lie to save
 "my life; I am sure her royal highness
 "is

214 THE WITCH, AND THE

“is in no raptures at all; for she is as still as a mouse, and looks as careless as any thing.” — “The princess is enjoying herself in her own way,” said Mr. Butler; “therefore, my dear, if you ever wish to see me a bishop, do not say another word.”

This silenced the good woman immediately; but it did not prevent some bitter reflections entering her imagination, as to the disgrace her embroidered cushions had met with, in having an old wooden bench preferred to them.

The princess commended the fruit and admired the flowers, the latter of which she put into her bosom; then arose, walked round once or twice, and took her leave. Mrs. Butler had now the honour of opening the wicket-gate for her royal highness, and received a gracious

gracious smile. The party walked back very well satisfied to the Abbey.

“Well,” said Mrs. Butler, “if any
 “body had told me, that a princess was
 “to come into my house in such a way,
 “I could not have believed it; I should
 “have been so angry, that I should have
 “been ready to have torn them in
 “pieces. Why, she never went into
 “the best room at all; saw nothing of
 “my nice brown boards, that are con-
 “stantly rubbed till they shine like a
 “looking-glass, and which for years and
 “years I have taken such pains about.
 “Nay, I don’t know [*speaking to her*
 “*daughters*] that there has been a foil
 “upon them these ten years. And as
 “to you, my dear, you will never be a
 “bishop, I am sure; for instead of say-
 “ing that you were *contented*, and all
 “that nonsense, you should have said,
 “that

“ that you were quite miserable, should
 “ have abused the house, and called it
 “ the shabbiest place in the world ;
 “ which would have given her royal
 “ highness some hints of the matter. I
 “ warrant she would have understood
 “ you well enough ; but you will never
 “ be a bishop, I see that.”

“ I do not intend it, my dear,” said
 Mr. Butler ; “ I live happily, I have a
 “ good income while I do live, and when
 “ I die can leave you and our daughters
 “ an easy competence. Could you see
 “ into the world, you would, I am sure,
 “ be perfectly satisfied.” — “ No,”
 said she, “ I can never be satisfied when
 “ people don’t make the most of their
 “ good luck. Why, her royal highness
 “ coming here was a chance in ten
 “ thousand, and see how you have let
 “ it slip through your fingers.” — “ My
 “ dear

“ dear wife,” said Mr. Butler, “ consider
“ how many years we have lived hap-
“ pily together in this place ; our lot has
“ been extremely fortunate ; we have
“ not been tossed about the world as
“ many others are ; let us not wrangle,
“ therefore ; you know that peace is
“ what I prefer to every thing ; and you
“ also know, that I would, to please you,
“ give up any thing but my happiness.
“ Rest assured, that I am not fit to be a
“ bishop, nor you a bishop’s wife. We
“ are respected in our present situations,
“ and do not let us entertain a wish to
“ become ridiculous in our old age.”

“ Well, well,” said Mrs. Butler,
rolling up her best gloves, “ I must go
“ and take off this gown, and brush and
“ fold it nicely. I will take care of my
“ affairs, whatever other folks may do
“ with theirs.”

Lady Lisle wrote to lady Harrington, to say, that she had made every inquiry in her power concerning her friend, but without effect; that she had seen Mr. Devereux, who returned his thanks for her care of the property, but that he could hear nothing of Matilda Devereux; and, as that was the case, he begged that the estate and money might remain in the hands of so good a steward as her ladyship.

The princess, on her return to the Abbey, expressed so much satisfaction at the visit to Mr. Butler, that for some time she continued the subject. "How happy must those good people be!" said the princess; "how free from the storms of life! Every violent blast which agitates the great, blows too high to affect them. Happy, happy in retirement and competence, they glide

“glide smoothly through the world,
 “and in a good old age will sink peace-
 “ably into the grave ; their memories
 “loved by their friends, and respected
 “by their neighbours!”

“Few men have lived better beloved
 “than Mr. Butler,” said lady Harrington ; “and no man has deserved it more.
 “His meekness, cheerfulness, good
 “sense, and above all his religion and
 “charity, have marked him as a blessing,
 “confined indeed to a little spot ; but
 “every individual within his reach has
 “been benefited either by his precept
 “or example. I assure your royal
 “highness that I speak from my own
 “feelings and knowledge ; his religion
 “is sincere and cheerful ; his charity be-
 “stowed with the greatest possible ad-
 “vantage to the receiver ; nay, I can
 “give you, madam, other proofs of his
 L 2 “character :

“ character : he was ever indulgent to
 “ the follies of youth and inexperience,
 “ and can bear the tiresome prattle of
 “ weak uninformed people without
 “ shewing any impatience. His tem-
 “ per is so good, that he is never agitated
 “ by the little inevitable evils of life,
 “ but bears them with a sobriety and
 “ patience that charms me. To sum
 “ up his character in the words of our
 “ great dramatic poet, “ Take him for
 “ all in all, we ne’er shall look upon his
 “ like again.”

“ I am concerned,” said the princess,
 “ that he will not move in a higher
 “ sphere for the benefit of mankind.
 “ His example might do much good ;
 “ yet, at the same time, I must acknow-
 “ ledge, that he has shewn his judgment
 “ and good sense, in preferring ease and
 “ retirement,

“retirement, at his time of life, to the
“bustle of the world.”

The next day, as the young ladies were at their toilet, Mrs. Bridget seemed extremely low in spirits. “What is
“the matter?” said Miss Harrington.
“Are you not well? You seem not to
“be so cheerful as usual.” — “There
“is cause enough for that, good young-
“lady. Who could have thought such
“changes and chances could happen in
“the world! then the deceitfulness of
“some folks! I am sure, what with
“their swearing, and what with their
“lying, one would think that the *Old*
“*One* himself had got fast hold on them.
“I am sure my heart aches when I
“think on’t.” — “What is all this
“about, Bridget? You talk as if you
“were mad.” — “So I am almost cra-
“zy; fit for nothing in this world

“but to be a cousin Betty, and wander
“about the country, all betrapped
“with flowers and willow-garlands.” —
“Speak out,” said Miss Harrington;
“is the serjeant ——” — “The serjeant
“is a devil *in carnation!*” said Bridget.
“Last—yes, last Monday, he got some-
“thing great as to money; it was, I
“think, a *quarter-of-a-master’s* place; a
“very fine thing, which brings in plenty
“of money; what could possess the man
“I can’t think; but this blessed morning
“was he married to Bet Hawthorn, a
“tallow-faced minx, who is little better
“than a couple of deal boards clapped
“together. Oh that ever I was born!”
A flood of tears came very seasonably to
the waiting-gentlewoman’s relief, or the
complaint might have been as long as
ever was uttered by forsaken damsel in
romance:

“ Ta/

“ Take courage, Bridget,” said Miss Harrington; “ take courage, and do not expose yourself in this manner. You will be the jest of the whole family; you will furnish them with laughter for the whole winter; I should be glad to see you carry it off with a high hand; that would show your spirit, and give me pleasure.”—“ It is very well, my dear young lady,” returned Bridget, “ for those to laugh who win; but a-fee’s the loser generally laughs on the wrong side of the mouth.” — “ I am surprised,” said Matilda, “ that this fellow did not take a fancy to Jenny Hawthorn, who is a very pretty girl.”—“ No, no, young lady, she would not so much as look at him; that farthing-candle Bet has got forty good marks left her by her grandmother; and that was the bait which caught this gudgeon. Joy go
L 4 “ with

“with them, Ly I; I warrant she will
 “cut a pretty figure on the top of a
 “baggage waggon in a frosty morning,
 “with her nose nipped with the cold,
 “till it is the colour of the long purple
 “flower that grows in the meadow;
 “and should they be sent beyond sea to
 “fight the blacks, there would be a
 “triumphant day for poor Bridget!”

“Do not be so ill-natured, Bridget,”
 said Miss Harrington. “Come, I am
 “going to look over my wardrobe;
 “perhaps I may find something that I
 “do not want.”—“God bless you, my
 “dear good lady! and if I don’t pluck
 “up a spirit, and wear that nice gown
 “with an air that shall tell them I defy
 “them all! and then, let them snigger
 “and sneer just as much as they like,
 “Bridget will carry it off in defiance,
 “or die for it.”—“Here is a gown,”
 said

said Miss Harrington, "which you shall have."—"It will become you of all things," said Matilda, "and will suit your complexion exactly."—"Now," said Bridget, "I am a match for them; and no more moving stories shall he tell me; how a great lady died for love of him, and so broke her heart, poor soul! because her relations were cruel, and such like. These things has he said many and many a time in the buttery; but he shall never do it again, I can assure him:"—and away she trotted with her gown under her arm.

The princess grew extremely attached to the Harringtons, and her days had passed quietly and pleasantly at the Abbey.—One morning a courier arrived with letters from the king to her royal highness and lord Harrington, desiring

the princess to come to town, and lord Harrington with his family to attend her. His lordship's letter gave him to understand, that the Prince Palatine was arrived from the continent, and wished to marry the princess; to which the king had no objection, but would not have it mentioned to her till they had seen each other. The princess regretted leaving the Abbey, but was prepared to meet the king with cheerfulness. The young Harringtons were in raptures; they thought and conversed of nothing else. Elizabeth and Matilda wanted to see the world, particularly the court, though lady Harrington had frequently told them, that it was not what it had been in the glorious reign of her royal mistress; that every thing was flat and uninteresting, compared to the magnificent court of Elizabeth. It was sufficient that they had not seen it; and they,
like

like most young people, had a great deal of curiosity, which mere description can never gratify.

Robert was as happy as lovers were permitted to be in those days, encompassed by hopes and fears, and ready to lay down his life at the feet of his divinity. John, in colonel Vere's regiment, was to have the honour of being one of her royal highness's escort to London, and was thinking of the pleasure he should feel on entering town, having, while with his father, envied a troop of horse that he saw prancing along the streets, when he heard the admiration of the multitude upon the occasion. Oh, thought he, had I but a troop, how well my men and horses should be disciplined, how smart their regimentals and accoutrements should be, and what pleasure I should enjoy in having them the first in the kingdom!

Every one flatters himself with the attainment of what he wishes, and hope was certainly implanted in the human heart to sustain us through all the trying vicissitudes of life. — John Harrington certainly looked forward to a truncheon; he did right, and I could wish all my warlike countrymen would do the same. An admiral's flag or a truncheon are fine things. My mercantile friends look to an alderman's gown, a full purse, and a snug villa; my country neighbours, to being respectable magistrates, experimental farmers, and the guardians of the poor; and you, my honest friends, who plow the field, or work at the loom, to a nice little snug farm or shop: be therefore industrious and sober.

But to you whom birth and fortune have placed in a higher station in this
happy

happy island, it is to you that we look up to support the laws of our country, to cherish its constitution, to preserve its interests and its liberties, and to hand them down pure and unfulled to your sons; to foster genius, in whatever form it appears, and to study, protect, and encourage the liberal arts.

The cavalcade travelled slowly towards London, and in a few days reached it. The princess was eager to embrace the king and prince Charles. They thought her much improved, and the prince said a great many agreeable things to lady Harrington upon the occasion. Lady Harrington had done her duty in every respect, and therefore the compliments paid by the prince were grateful. The pains she had taken were amply repaid, and she felt herself relieved from a great care on that account. She inquired

quired for her friend Matilda, but could hear nothing; this shed a damp upon her feelings, for she foreboded that her friend was no more; she was fearful of it, and persuaded herself it was so.—She wished to see Mr. Devereux; but the real fact was, she wanted the friend of her early life with her.

The days of youth are so pure and simple, when passed in the country, that reflection upon them can never fail to give pleasure. The walk in Spring, when Nature begins to give promise of blossoms, the springing corn and grass, the singing of the larks above our heads, the simple twittering of the hedge-sparrow in the bushes, and the fluttering of the butterflies in the green lanes, must give to an unsophisticated mind those kinds of emotions and sensations which are much easier felt than described.

But our family had nothing to do with these pleasures at present. The elector was presented to the princess; the consequence was, that the princess liked the elector, and the elector fell point-blank in love with the princess. Nothing farther was to be done but to marry them in the most magnificent manner possible; and the wedding was to be graced with all those shows which were the taste of the times; jousts and tournaments were to be held with great pomp in the morning, and the evening was to conclude with masques and dancing.

The lists were set, and all the ladies of any fashion assembled, when the knights with their beavers down appeared at the barrier. The trumpets sounded, and prince Charles and the elector came forward; the prince upon a gallant black horse, and the elector upon

upon a cream-coloured courser, with a white mane and tail. The motto of the prince was, *I wish for victory*, and that of the elector, *Love and honour support me*. They contended some time; at length the prince's horse made a false step, and the noble rider was thrown to the ground; the elector was declared victor, and received from the fair hand of the princess, with a suitable compliment, a beautiful embroidered scarf of her own working. Other gallant knights signalized themselves by their prowess and dexterity, and the masque and ball concluded the evening.

The next day Robert Harrington entered the lists, with *Love, assist thy votary*; and was opposed by sir Henry Wingfield, with *I profess not till I conquer*: the latter was victorious, and received from the princess a fan of feathers

feathers to present to the mistress of his heart. He knelt gracefully, and gave it to Matilda Harrington. Colonel Vere then approached, with *Soldier, contend for the fairest*; and was met by Sir Charles Glenham, with *Beauty challenges the field*: the prize was won by the former, who received a diamond heart set round with rubies, which he presented to Miss Harrington.—Then rode in two knights without mottos, who sustained a long contest; at length victory declared in favour of the knight upon the white steed, who proved to be Robert Harrington, and the unfortunate opponent was Sir Charles Glenham. Robert hastened to present his prize, which was a weeping cupid, to Miss Lisle; but, somehow or other, both the giver and receiver hesitated so much in their speeches, that those about them could never find out their meaning.

ing. At last John Harrington appeared, with *Forward in obtaining glory*; and was opposed by a young soldier, sir Robert Rich, with *Conquest or death*; and after a long contest, in which the combatants received great applause for their scientific knowledge of the profession, John Harrington unhorsed his antagonist, and received from the princess a golden cupid, shooting his arrows blindfold. — He stood like a statue, for some time, not knowing what to do with the prize; at last he presented it to an old general's wife who happened to be near him. This saved him trouble, and he really was at that time unprepared to select one who was young and beautiful, and was well pleased when the old lady promptly said, "As glory is your mistress, sir knight, I accept this as your friend."

For

For some weeks the young Harringtons were as happy as possible; but the queen was going to leave the kingdom, and lord and lady Harrington followed themselves at Coombe Abbey. Lord Harrington had received some favourable notices from Miss Lisle; and colonel Harrington did every thing to obtain the like of Miss Harrington. Sir Henry Gifford was dying for love of Miss Harrington; lady Naunton, the old general's daughter, patronized John, telling him, that the compliment he paid her was what she did not expect, as it had not happened for thirty years; and the general was so well pleased with his gallantry and motto, that he wished to do every thing in his power to put him in a way of obtaining glory; for which purpose he presented him with a commission of lieutenant of horse which the king had pleased to bestow upon him. John Harrington,

Harrington, who had been laughed at, and received volleys of wit from his companions, thought himself extremely well off; he obtained the honour of kissing the lady's hand, and was allowed the privilege of terming her his mother.

At length the day arrived for returning to the Abbey; and our family departed with various emotions and various reflections; for it is certain, when people are in a crowd they may act, but it is seldom that they give much way to reflection; in riding from London to Coventry, however, they had sufficient leisure for the latter. When lady Harrington drew near the Abbey she rejoiced extremely; now she hoped to find repose and happiness for the rest of her days. "Oh," she said, "that my dear Matilda could but appear, to witness the heart-felt joy I feel! my
" eldest

“ Eldest son and my daughters are likely
“ to be settled agreeably to their inclina-
“ tions, and my youngest son to be pro-
“ moted in the profession of his choice.
“ Every thing that regards my family
“ wears a promising aspect; and we
“ ought surely to be thankful to Divine
“ Providence for thus showering down
“ its blessings upon us!”—In this frame
Of mind she entered the Abbey.

Lord Harrington had sufficient inter-
est to get his son's troop quartered at
Coventry, as it was the greatest pleasure
of his life to have his family about him;
and captain John Harrington arrived
with his soldiers a few days after the fa-
mily reached the Abbey.

My lord was happy in once more being
able to attend his favourite avocations,
and began to make inquiry into the state
of

of affairs, by sending for his steward.
“ Well, Jarvis, how goes the farm, and
“ the stock ?” — “ As well as can be,
“ an please your honour,” said the old
man ; “ only sorely troubled with ver-
“ min.” — “ Then the gamekeepers do
“ not do their duty,” said my lord.
“ Yes, your honour, indeed they do,
“ when they durst ; but they are mortal
“ fearful of going out o’ nights to set
“ their gins now.” — “ What are they
“ afraid of, Jarvis ?” — “ Why, of
“ witches, your honour, the worst sort of
“ vermin in the nation.” — “ Witches !”
said my lord, “ where do they come
“ from, and what harm can they do
“ me ?” Jarvis shook his head. “ They
“ come (as I have been told, my lord,
“ by those that know) from Lapland ;
“ they ride upon broomsticks till they
“ get into Scotland, just as well in the
“ clouds, as your honour on your best
“ horse

horse to Coventry, and in as little time.
Now I heard that there was a proclamation in Scotland directing them all to be made away with; for not a horse, a cow, nor any living creature, could be found for them: and so, many, aye, and many of the worst sort, are fled into England." — "This is a strange story, Jarvis," said my lord; "and I am in hopes not true. I have heard of proclamations against witches; but indeed I look upon them to be only poor superannuated women, without friends, or the means of supporting themselves; which gives their neighbours cause to suppose that they are familiar with the devil or his agents. But I do not think it possible." — "It is indeed, your honour; and I never see an ugly old woman sitting at her door in the sun, bent double, her nose and chin like a pair of nut-crackers,

“ crackers, and a cat by her side, but I
“ am always sure she is a witch.”

“ Well, well,” said my lord, rather
peevishly, “ what mischief have they
“ done me ?” — “ Done !” said the old
man, “ more harm than they will ever
“ do good. First, your honour, they
“ have killed the fine old flea-bitten
“ mare, lamed two of the best colts,
“ given Topper the yellows, thrown
“ Lofty into the staggers, broke Pop-
“ pet’s knees as he came from Coventry,
“ whither I rode him myself, and made
“ Black Bess slip her foal ; three of the
“ Cows are dead-lame of the maltlong ;
“ they have turned three of the yearlings
“ dizzy, killed twelve hens of the roup,
“ sucked the blood of seven turkeys,
“ hunted the ducks about, so that five
“ have forsaken their nests, given twen-
“ ty sheep the rot, and the pigeons have
“ flown

“ Flown about like mad ; and there was
“ nothing but a poor silly owl in the
“ house.” — “ That was surely enough
“ to frighten them,” said my lord ; “ but
“ who is suspected of all these things ?” —
“ Several,” said Jarvis ; “ there are too
“ many of them, your honour.” —
“ But are there any pointed out as being
“ very bad ?” — “ Why, my lord, some
“ say the old woman upon the common
“ is the worst ; and others say she that
“ lives in the White Cottage ; but I do not
“ think there is a pin to chuse.” — “ I
“ shall inquire about them,” replied my
lord ; “ but at the same time must confess,
“ that all you have told me may have
“ proceeded from natural causes.” —
“ To be sure, your honour,” said Jarvis,
“ nothing in the world is so natural as
“ for an ugly old woman, when she can
“ do no good at all, to turn witch ; for
“ when they are so helpless and so old

“ as not to be able to work out of the
 “ house, or spin in it, why then taking
 “ up witchcraft is a very good trade.” —
 “ But what can they make of it ?” said
 my lord. “ Oh, your honour, why to
 “ be sure the more mischief they do, the
 “ better. Now, it was but this very
 “ day fortnight, that Goody Wright’s
 “ eldest girl was bewitched with fits,
 “ and Goody being a cunning one, what
 “ did she do, but go to the witch in the
 “ White Cottage, and offered her money
 “ to cure her. This witch is a sort of a
 “ doctor, my lord ; but she would not take
 “ a farthing, nothing but a little basket
 “ of apples, and told Goody Wright
 “ that if she came in half an hour she
 “ would have something ready for the
 “ poor girl ; to work she went, and, I
 “ warrant, a power of charms were
 “ muttered over the mess, for the girl
 “ soon got well and has not been ill
 “ since.”

“since.” — “Well, Jarvis,” said my lord, “if they have the power of doing good, they may certainly be of infinite use to mankind.” — “Yes, yes,” replied the old man, “but that maggot seldom bites; for evil they are, and therefore evil betide them; and if I was your honour, I would——” — “We will say no more of them at present,” said my lord; “how does the corn look?” — “Oh, purely, my lord; as fine crops as eye can see or heart can wish; and the young trees planted last year thrive mainly; for I have been careful to keep them from the cattle.” — “That is well, Jarvis; order my horse, that I may go and look at them.”

Lady Harrington with her daughters went into the garden, and inquired after her treasures; her carnations, tulips,

and auriculas. The gardener looked melancholy. "My lady," said he, "I have the worst news in the world to tell you; every thing here is bewitched; hardly any business I have undertaken has gone right; and indeed, my lady, I have worked hard, and thought of nothing but my business night and day; but it does not signify, I might as well lean upon my spade from morning till night; for, as sure as I live, we are all bewitched." — "Bewitched!" said Miss Harrington; "by whom?" — "Some say, young lady, by the witch in the White Cottage, and others, by the old hag upon the common; but I know a little of her in the White Cottage." — "And what do you know of her?" said Matilda. "Why, a few years ago I cut my leg sadly with a scythe, and went to the Coventry doctors with it; but they
" did

“ did me no good; and coming home
“ by the White Cottage as the nearest
“ way, for I was very lame, the old wo-
“ man was sitting at her door, and asked
“ me what made me so lame. So I
“ told her; and she said she could cure
“ me, if I would be ruled by her; which
“ I was glad to be, as the doctors had
“ made me worse and worse. So she
“ got some herbs, mashed them, and
“ desired me to wash my leg well with
“ the juice made hot; she then put on
“ some of the green herbs, bandaged up
“ my leg tight, and told me not to stir,
“ but to keep it laid up for a fortnight;
“ but before that time was out, I got
“ well. Therefore I think, my lady, a
“ person who could do so good an action
“ can't be a witch; it must be the old
“ woman who lives upon the common;
“ but I have almost every thing ruined;
“ auricula and carnation pots tumbled

“over and broke, and the plants torn
“in pieces; tulips and hyacinths
“turned out of the mould, the glasses
“broke every night in the frames; and
“such noises I hear at midnight as make
“my courage quail.” — “Why did you
“not get up to see what it was?” said
lady Harrington. “Surely you might
“have the courage to look at them.” —
“Oh, yes, my lady, I have seen them
“many and many a time; they appear
“in the shape of monstrous cats, with
“eyes goggling all ways. I have counted
“twenty of them together, when they
“have been at their frolicks.” — “And
“why did you not hunt them away,”
said Matilda, “or set traps to catch
“them?” — “Oh, young lady, I am
“not afraid of a lion, and if they were
“real cats I should not mind a thousand
“of them; but they are devils’ imps in
“that shape; and if I was to affront one
“of

“ of them, and it was to turn itself into
“ some hideous monster, it might be-
“ reave me of my wits.” — “ But have
“ you any other reasons,” said lady
Harrington, “ for thinking the woman
“ in the White Cottage a witch?” —
“ Why, my lady, after she had cured my
“ leg, I took notice that the vine which
“ ran all the way up the gable-end of
“ her house wanted cutting; I told her
“ so, and cut it for her, for which she
“ was very thankful; and there is not
“ a finer vine in the country, nor one
“ which bears better fruit — as fine a
“ black cluster as ever was seen; the
“ sides of the house are covered with
“ roses and honey-suckles, and I have
“ trimmed them for her ever since. She
“ is a well spoken woman, and offered
“ me money for what I did; but I was
“ aware of her character, and would
“ have none of it. Besides, she would

“ not be paid for curing my leg ; but
“ I don't know, my ladies ; for I saw
“ nothing amiss about her, except her be-
“ ing very ugly, and having three imps
“ in her house, which I saw basking one
“ day at the bottom of her garden. I
“ went gently to take a peep at them
“ through the bushes ; but they were as
“ cunning as I, for they shot off, and
“ flew like arrows in at a chamber win-
“ dow ; so quick, that if my eyes did
“ not deceive me, they never touched
“ the honey-suckle against the house.”—
“ And what were these creatures like ?”
said Matilda in surprise. “ Two of
“ them, young lady, like black cats,
“ and the other like a tabby ; and one
“ night, when the moon shone very
“ clear, I saw them upon the top of her
“ house, making a most hideous noise ;
“ so I gave a good shout, and they dart-
“ ed in at the window again. But as
“ this

"this person has been a good friend to
"me, my lady, I should not like to see
"her suffer; and these familiars may
"belong to the old hag upon the
"common."

"Well, gardener," said lady Har-
rington, "take what care you can, and
"I hope we shall find out the person
"who has done us so much damage."

In the evening my lord related the
steward's story; in which he saw nothing
like witchcraft. The flea-bitten mare
died, he said, certainly from age; Pop-
pet's knees might be broke from Jarvis's
head being overcharged with ale; the
colts, cows, and yearlings, were recover-
ed; and he thought that care, and a good
farrier, would have been of more use
than his people were willing to allow;
that their having an idea of witchcraft

had prevented them from applying what was usual in such cases, and therefore the animals were longer before they recovered. As to the mare slipping her foal, he imputed it to the wetness of the season; and the sow eating her pigs, to their being dead, and the animal's having no other means of getting rid of them. Hens were subject to the roup; and the turkeys were killed, and the ducks probably frightened by the foxes; the pigeons being alarmed by the owl, who was certainly an enemy, was natural enough; and therefore, to develop these things, he invited them to go in the morning and pay a visit to one of the witches. Lady Harrington and her daughters agreed, the young men being at that time upon a visit.

The morning was fine, and they thought of going to the White Cottage first.

first. "Why, from the accounts," said my lord, "that is the best of the two; let us go to the common. I like to encounter the worst first. But do you, Elizabeth and Matilda, behave extremely well, or the old woman may play you some trick." — "I should like," said Miss Harrington, "to go to the White Cottage first, because, if I recollect, it looks neat; the other seemed to be a mere hovel, not fit for a human being." — "Don't be afraid, Elizabeth, I will guard you," said my lord, "and I want to see the young plantation of oaks close to the old wood which I made last year. The old woman may have bewitched them for aught I know; for that reason let us proceed to the common."

They met a girl about a quarter of a mile from the plantation, and asked her

if there was not a witch lived thereabouts. She said, "Yes." — "Did you ever hear of any mischief she did to her neighbours?" said Matilda. "Oh yes! I have heard of a great deal." — "Then tell us what you know." After some recollection, she said, "that her mother's cow last summer strayed away for three days, could not be found any where, and then came back all on a sudden; and it must be the witch that did it." — "You will, perhaps, shew us the way," said lady Harrington. "There is not much path," said the girl; "for the folks do not like to go so near a witch; but that is the house, and please your honours," pointing with her finger, and then sitting down upon a bank, as if she wished to make observations upon what was passing. As they came near the house it seemed the abode of wretchedness; they knocked at

at the door, but no one answered ; they then lifted up the latch, went in, and saw a very old woman asleep in a chair ; her cloaths in a very tattered condition ; and a bundle of rotten flicks, tied together with a rope, laid upon the clay-floor. The windows were broken in many places, and stuffed with rags ; the bed (if it might be so called) was a miserable assemblage of pieces of old sacks, on which a cat was laid, who did not seem pleased at the visitors, but suddenly bounced out at the door. The noise the animal made alarmed Miss Harrington, who gave a kind of scream, which awakened the old woman. She rubbed her eyes, and stared at them before she spoke, as if she could not believe what she saw. At last, looking round, she said, " Where am I ? where can I be ?" — " At home, good woman," said lady Harrington ; " we were walking past,
" and

“and wished to sit down; will you give
“us leave?” — “Ah,” said the old
woman, “this is no place for such as
“you seem to be to sit down in; but,
“such as it is, your honours are welcome.
“I am very old, fourscore and odd;
“and what is still worse, they despise
“me for my age, which is a thing I can’t
“help; and as I am poor, it would be
“a happy thing for me if I was in a bet-
“ter world.” — “But what has made
“you so poor?” said my lord. “Please
“your honour,” she replied, “old age,
“and the loss of my children; I have
“lost six, one way or other, in less than
“ten years.” — “Those must be great
“losses indeed,” said lady Harrington.
“Yes,” she said, “I lost then the only
“stay and prop of my life, and all the
“joy too. I am grown unable to work;
“the parish allow me some little matter;
“but the folks of the village will not
“let

“let me live among them ; I believe,
“indeed, my crosses might make me
“say and do strange things, for I was
“little better than crazy for some time.
“Now nobody comes near me. I had
“been gathering some sticks out of his
“honour lord Harrington’s wood,
“and tired myself ; so that I believe I
“fell asleep ; and yet I must go out again
“for my dinner, or have none ; but I
“am so weary that I wish I could sleep
“for ever.” — “And what were you to
“have for dinner ?” said Matilda. “A
“few hop-tops, or foal’s-foot, young
“lady,” — “And is that all ?” —
“Yes,” she said, “with a bit of bread.
“I was looked upon once, and had
“friends ; but now I am an outcast ;
“for every body who loved me has
“been dead a great while, and a new
“set that know nothing of me are come
“in their places.” — “You shall have
“things

“ things a little more comfortable about
 “ you,” said lady Harrington. “ Ah,
 “ my good lady,” said the old woman,
 “ nothing vexes me so much as not to
 “ be able to do for myself. I am oblig-
 “ ed, as you see, to live in dirt; my
 “ heart is good, but I cannot make
 “ these old bones move.”

“ Well,” said my lord as they walked
 out, “ are any of you bewitched ?” —
 “ If we are,” said lady Harrington, “ it
 “ must be with a fit of compassion, for
 “ I feel it extremely strong upon me.” —
 “ Indeed, madam,” said Matilda, “ it
 “ affects us in the same way; and I
 “ hope you will, my lord, do something
 “ for this poor helpless creature.” —
 “ I will send to Coventry in the after-
 “ noon,” said lady Harrington, “ for
 “ an entire change of cloaths; nothing
 “ gratifies me so much as assisting those
 “ who

“ who cannot help themselves. This
“ woman has the true English spirit in
“ her, old as she is, that would disdain
“ assistance but from necessity; and the
“ infant, the infirm, and the aged, have
“ strong claims upon our benevolence.”

Mr. Butler overtook them, alighted, and led his horse. They related the adventure, and he told them, that the people in the neighbourhood, notwithstanding all he could say to persuade them to the contrary, were sure that the woman in the White Cottage was a witch; that many others were suspected among the lower class; and some even of higher rank were infected with the mania of the times. “ My good Mr. Butler,” said lady Harrington, “ I have been reflecting upon this business, and a difficulty is thrown in my way which I do not know how to get over. You
“ and

“ and I are not infected with this mania ;
“ yet I do not entertain a doubt but my
“ people are, and who can I get to take
“ care of the poor creature ? There is
“ a room over the garden-house ; but if
“ no one will go near her, she will be as
“ badly off as ever.” — “ Why that,”
said Mr. Butler, “ I think I can remedy,
“ if your ladyship will permit my wife’s
“ maid Nelly. She is a courageous
“ girl ; we have two female servants now,
“ and therefore Nelly is at your service for
“ any business you may chuse to employ
“ her upon.” — “ I am much obliged
“ to you,” returned lady Harrington ;
“ but at all events I will try my own
“ household first ; and if they should be
“ averse, I think they will be ashamed
“ of themselves when they find Nelly
“ return without harm.”

Lady

Lady Harrington convened the household; and told them that many people had been wicked enough to say, that several women in the neighbourhood practised witchcraft, to the great annoyance of mankind; but that age and poverty were the only crimes she believed them guilty of; that she wished to relieve a person reputed a witch, whom she would clothe and protect, which must prove to them that there was no such thing; that she should send two of them to the cottage upon the common, in the morning, to convey the old woman to the Abbey; that she dismissed them for the present, and would in two hours settle with the housekeeper who was to go.

The time soon elapsed, and the housekeeper appeared. "Well, Vincent," said lady Harrington, "have my people
"got

“ got the better of their fears, and are
 “ they prepared to shew their sense ?” —
 “ No, I can’t say they are,” said the
 housekeeper. “ They one and all say,
 “ that they would go through fire and
 “ water to serve your ladyship; but
 “ they can’t abide witches, and are in
 “ fear of their lives from them.”

“ But, Vincent, you cannot suppose a
 “ poor miserable old woman so danger-
 “ ous a thing as running into the fire,
 “ or plunging into the water; besides,
 “ I am persuaded (as I told you before)
 “ that there are no such beings as
 “ witches. I have seen this formidable
 “ creature; and I am sure it was poverty
 “ only that made her be taken for such.
 “ But, to come to the point, will any of
 “ them go ?”

“ Not one, my lady, neither men nor
 “ maids, but the gardener.” — “ Then
 “ the

“ the gardener is the only one, except
“ yourself, that has common sense.”—
“ They are all crying their eyes out
“ about it, my lady,” said the house-
keeper. “ You must be sensible,”
returned lady Harrington, “ that my
“ servants ought to obey me.”—“ To
“ be sure, my lady,” said the house-
keeper; “ only witchcraft is such a cry-
“ ing sin; to be sure, if the lowest girl
“ in the house would go for the witch,
“ to oblige your ladyship I would go
“ with her; but indeed, my lady, they
“ one and all give it up.”—“ Then
“ they are one and all a parcel of
“ cowards,” said the lady. “ But as I
“ have great confidence in you, Vincent,
“ and ever had, (for you were always
“ superior in understanding to the com-
“ mon people,) and from what you
“ have now said I find I am right;
“ to-morrow you shall go to the cottage
“ upon

"got the better of me. — " My lady !"

"they prepared to go to the housekeeper. " Yes,

" No, I can't go to-morrow you shall go to the

housekeeper. — " *Who has most cruelly been taken*

" that the *witch*, and see her new-clothed ;

" wate *and I know I can depend upon your*

" t' *and it gives me the highest*

" *opinion of you, that you have offered*

" *your services upon this occasion, as it*

" *is a very proper example to all the*

" *other servants.*" — " It is a long way

" to the common, my lady, and I am

" troubled with the rheumatism, which

" makes my ancles so poorly sometimes,

" that I can hardly hobble to church,"

said the housekeeper. " That I have

" taken into consideration," returned

the lady ; " and therefore you shall have

" the lazy black pad to carry you there."

— " If the witch is very filthy and dirty,

" I shall not be able to touch her, my

" lady." — " There is no occasion for

" that,

“; for Nelly, Mrs. But-
 as to go with you; and I
 aged to you, Vincent, for un-
 taking this business.”

Mrs. Vincent retired, not very well pleased with the honour.—Certain notions, of the witch having a figure of wax, &c. entered her imagination; the horrible idea of her being melted two-eighths of an inch every day conveyed the most tormenting reflection, and she did not once consider, that the Necromancer Time dissolved her daily, as it was. The night was spent in direful dreams; broomsticks were for ever presenting themselves to her terrified imagination; galloping through the air upon these implements turned her head giddy; and her sleep, instead of balm, became poison.

The

The morning opened brilliant and beautiful; the cart, black pad, and gardener were ready at the door; and lady Harrington, who felt herself extremely interested in the business, went to see them set off. Nelly, quite unconcerned, was jumping into the cart. "I am obliged to Mr. Butler," said my lady, "for permitting you to go on this errand for me; for my people are such cowards they dare not encounter an old woman of eighty."

Off they went. The gardener spoke only to the horse; Mrs. Vincent paced slowly after them, and, contrary to her usual custom, did not utter one syllable. Nelly went humming *Johnny Armstrong's good Night, or the cruelties of Barbara Allen*, without thinking at all.

When they arrived at the cottage, "Gardener," said Mrs. Vincent, "what
" are

“are we to do with the horses?” —
 “I’ll hold them, madam, while you and
 Nelly get the witch ready; and then,
 if need be, I can lift her into the
 cart.” — “If I get off this beast,” said
 Mrs. Vincent, “I can never get on
 again, for here is no horse-block;
 therefore I’ll not get off, not I. Nelly
 shall go in and get the old woman
 ready, and you too if you will. I can
 hold the horse, he is gentle enough.”
 — “I thought, madam, you were afraid
 of the horse.” — “Not half so much
 as I am of impertinence,” said Vin-
 cent; “therefore do you carry the
 bundle for Nelly, do you hear?” [*in a
 loud voice.*] “Yes, madam,” he an-
 swered in the same key; took the
 bundle in his hand, gave it to Nelly
 at the door, and sat himself upon the
 grass. Every thing was quiet for a
 quarter of an hour, when Nelly uttered a

kind of scream. The gardener jumped up, and went into the house.

“ Good gracious !” said Mrs. Vincent to herself, “ the witch has murdered the girl, and the gardener too for aught I know; but if I stay here to be made away with, I’ll be shot.” So, letting go the rein of the horse in the cart, she applied her whip violently to the side of the black pad, turned his head towards home, and rode as boldly as if she had been only five-and-twenty. The horse in the cart, having a very great affection for his own stable and his friend the black pad, set off after them. Mrs. Vincent hearing a tremendous rumbling behind her, urged her horse to the top of his speed, and the animal in the cart exerted all his strength, being resolved not to be left behind. The porter at the park-gate, hearing the clattering,

clattering, opened it, when the black pad darted through, the horse and cart immediately following, and arrived in a few moments at the grand entrance.

“ Oh, I am bewitched, and dying by inches!” screamed Vincent. “ I am sure this is not my lady’s horse; it can’t be hers; that infernal hag changed it in the stable this morning, and this is one of her familiars; it flew with me, I will take my oath it flew with me through a thunder storm. Oh, the poor girl is murdered, and the gardener too!” — Her strength was exhausted, and she fainted as they took her off the horse.

Nelly had taken the bundle from the gardener, and gone coolly into the cottage. “ I am come from her honour, lady Harrington, Goody,” said Nelly,

“and have brought you here a nice suit
“of clothes and linen, new from top
“to toe; and there is Mrs. House-
“keeper, and Mr. Columbine the gar-
“dener, waiting with a cart for you.
“My lady says you shall live in comfort
“now.”—“Then it was their honours
“I saw yesterday,” said the old woman;
“Heaven shower down its blessings
“upon their heads! for I can do no-
“thing but pray for them.”

“Well, come,” said Nelly, “here
“are nice worsted stockings, good
“strong shoes, and every thing com-
“plete. Let me help you, for you
“don’t seem very strong.”—“No,”
said she, “but I have been as stout as
“any one in the parish, and would have
“done out-door work with any she that
“ever lived.”—“Now,” said Nelly,
“don’t you feel yourself pure and com-
“fortable

“ comfortable in these nice things? Here
“ is your cap; there, I have combed and
“ righted your hair a little; and as sure
“ as can be, now that you are smarted
“ up, I have seen somebody like you,
“ but not so old. What is your name,
“ Goody?”—“ My name,” said the old
woman, “ is Gaps. I was born and
“ bred in the village of Coombe; my
“ eldest son Simon lived at Gosford
“ Green, and was as famous a man for
“ hedging, ditching, and thatching
“ stacks, as ever lived; but he is dead,
“ his wife is dead; and what is become
“ of his poor fatherless and motherless
“ children I don’t know.”

“ Oh, sure,” bawled Nelly, “ you are
“ my grandmother! Oh that I should
“ live so near you, and never find you
“ out! What a beast am I! while you
“ have been in want so long!” This

exclamation it was that brought in the gardener, and sent Mrs. Vincent and the black pad away post. "Oh, Mr. Columbine, I have found my dear grandmother, all rags, up to the neck in dirt, and hardly a morsel of bread to eat; and I have been living at Mr. Butler's for seven years in plenty." Then hugging the old woman, "My dear grandmother," said she, "I thought you had been dead long ago." Nelly again roared for joy; the old woman sobbed; the gardener wiped his eyes with the back of his hand, and then, putting it into his pocket, gave the old woman a shilling, saying to Nelly, "Now, my girl, let us be going, if you have done all your business." He looked out. "Mrs. Vincent and the cart are gone!" said the gardener. "Where?" said Nelly. "Home, I suppose," he replied. "I am

“I am frightened out of my wits,” said Nelly; “I have been too long, and shall get ill-will for this.”—“No, no,” said the gardener, “when they know all, you will have nobody angry with you; but I am afraid you won’t be able to walk so far, Goody; we have a long mile to go.”—Yes, give her but time, she walked farther every day; so, leaning upon Nelly, and taking the gardener’s arm, she proceeded slowly towards the Abbey.

The family were in great consternation at Vincent’s account that the black pad was a familiar of the witch’s; it was shaking from the violent exertions it had made, and yet stood at the door; when lady Harrington hearing a bustle, and seeing the people assembled, inquired what was the matter. One of the servants told her something which she could not understand; at last she found that

that Mrs. Vincent was almost frightened to death. My lord, returning from his morning's ride, received the same information ; and the horse and cart with the black pad were standing together. " Why do not you put up that horse ?" said my lord to one of the grooms. " Mrs. Vincent says, my lord, that it is one of the devil's imps, and flew with her through thunder and lightning ; and as that is the case, my lord, I don't much like to touch it." — " Come, Matilda," said my lord, " you, I know, are not foolish ; mount this horse, and we will go in search of the gardener." Matilda mounted the bewitched pad, and went with my lord.

At that instant Bridget came out ; and one of them telling her that their young lady was gone to certain destruction upon the black pad ; — " Well," said Bridget, " I would not be in her skin
" for

“ for a thousand pounds, no nor ten
 “ thousand neither. Ah, did you but
 “ know what poor Mrs. Vincent has
 “ gone through, and what she has seen !”
 “ What ?” said the butler, “ do tell us.”
 — “ Why,” said Bridget, “ she did not
 “ ride home upon a horse, but upon a
 “ thing without ears * ; for she vows she
 “ saw none till she stopped at the door,
 “ and then it raised them a little ; and
 “ she says that she flew through thunder
 “ and lightning ; that she did not feel the
 “ horse move at all ; that she lost her
 “ breath, and her eyes flashed fire every
 “ minute ; and I do not know whether
 “ she will ever be able to see again. —
 “ But what can folks expect that have
 “ to do with such wicked devils as
 “ witches ; for this is all their doing,
 “ I dare say, and a fine mess will be
 “ made on’t.”

* A horse, when pressed to the top of his speed, constantly squats his ears.

They

They now saw lord Harrington and Matilda returning. The porter at the lodge gate had told them, that the black pad had run full speed through, and the horse and cart after him; that they felt ready to drop; and that he was afraid Mrs. Vincent must have broke her neck; for he never *did see* any body ride so furious before. They had likewise met the gardener, Nelly, and Goody Gaps, and heard the story of Nelly having found her grandmother. My lord then went into the house, and informed lady Harrington, who rejoiced at finding the old woman to be what she wished; for Vincent's fright had discomposed her mind a little.

Nelly ran to the parsonage, and informed Mr. Butler of the joyful news; but lamented that her grandmother was to be in a room in the Abbey garden, observing, that there was a nice snug
room.

room to let at the end of his pales, and as he had a little money she would pay the rent of it; for she could rise two hours sooner, or do any thing, so she might have her under her eye. Mr. Butler said he would mention it to lady Harrington, and for that purpose would go to the Abbey.

Mr. Butler informed lady Harrington of Nelly's desire of having her grandmother under her care. "I am glad of it," said the lady; "for I am sorry to say that my people are such fools, that they will not come into a room where she is; and I began to be afraid she would be but indifferently taken care of, except by the gardener. But I will give Nelly the furniture I intended for the garden house; I will find the old woman clothes, and allow her half a crown a week, if Mrs. Butler will let that good girl attend her a little; and the parish must make their former allowance."

Goody Gaps sat in the buttery with the gardener, and the household now and then took a peep at her. At length the head cook, a decent elderly woman, took courage to go into the room, spoke first to the gardener, and then to the old woman; and her answers being extremely plain and easy to be understood, she entered into conversation concerning her birth, parentage, and education; and found, from the account she gave of herself, that she remembered her when her husband was living. This wore off in a great measure the distaste and dread which the servants had conceived against her; and the old woman lived in the cottage, under the care of her grand-daughter Nelly Gaps, in peace and comfort.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

THE
WITCH,
AND
THE MAID OF HONOUR.

Tales
Of woeful ages, long ago betid. SHAKESPEARE.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR THE AUTHOR;

AND SOLD BY T. N. LONGMAN AND O. REES,
PATERNOSTER-ROW.

1799.



THE WITCH,
AND
THE MAID OF HONOUR.

A FEW months passed without any circumstance occurring to lessen the happiness of the family. Sir Thomas Mansel was an old friend of lord Harrington, and was come from his house in Kent to visit him. Sir Thomas was an admiral, had seen a good deal of life, and was an agreeable companion; they were of course extremely happy in seeing each other; for if we meet the friends of our early days when we are advanced in life, it gives a double pleasure, as many are fallen from us.—They conversed upon
VOL. II. B their

their boyish days, the news, maritime affairs, and politics; and thence Sir Thomas descended to witches; he lamented that their numbers daily increased; that several hundreds had been condemned and executed in Scotland, Wales, and different parts of England; that it was a growing evil, and it was almost impossible to put a stop to it, for nobody was safe against whom they had a spite.

“Surely, my dear sir, you are not serious in what you say,” observed lady Harrington. She then told him the story of her witch upon the common, and the result of their inquiries concerning her.

Sir Thomas said, it might prove so in that instance; he wished every one came off so innocently, and was extremely

MAID OF HONOUR.

tremely glad to find his friend's family
had escaped their baleful influence.—
“ But what possible pleasure can it be,
“ fir Thomas,” said lady Harrington,
“ for the human species to torment?
“ If a frightful old woman has the power
“ of hurting others, I should suppose
“ likewise, that she has the power of
“ serving herself. Why should she
“ then, my dear fir, live in dirt, rags,
“ and misery?”—“ As to defining,”
said fir Thomas, “ what can, or what
“ cannot be done, that is out of my
“ power; but it certainly is so, or such
“ numbers would not have been exe-
“ cuted; and it would be highly im-
“ proper to blame their judges; for
“ they must have had real and full proof
“ of their guilt before they condemned
“ them.—And I suppose,” he added,
“ your ladyship has heard of the shock-
“ ing affair which happened at my lord

4 THE WITCH, AND THE

“of Rutland’s.” No, she had not heard any thing of it.—“Then, madam, the case was this: an old woman who had lived many years in the family had done something wrong; and being severely chid by lady Rutland, her malice was carried to such a height, that she made a compact with the devil, and by means of a familiar in the form of a brinded cat, (which she called Rutterkin,) she was the death of three innocent children, who pined away without any apparent malady.—And I can assure your ladyship that it was nearly the death of lady Rutland also.”

This conversation of sir Thomas Mansel’s hurt lady Harrington extremely; her mind had been quieted with regard to witches; and it was happy in being assured that there were no such beings

ings in existence. — But sir Thomas is an old man, a grave man, and had never been considered as a man of honour. — What then was she to conclude? That he had been misinformed, perhaps. — But would sir Thomas Mansel state circumstances as matter of fact, he had not been perfectly assured of their truth? — No; she could not think so meanly of sir Thomas Mansel; she must have been mistaken herself; but it was a mistake so hurtful to her feelings, so prejudicial to society, that she flattered herself the decisions of her own mind were right. — They certainly are more charitable; in short, at last her senses were absolutely in “wandering mazes lost.” — She might live to be very old; her faculties might be weakened, and her memory so impaired, that she might say and do many ridiculous things. — In short, she might herself

be taken for a witch twenty years hence (the odds were twenty to one that she did not see eighty; but at the moment calculations of that sort escaped her entirely, and the possibility of it gave her extreme pain).—She sat with her head upon her hand, looking out at a window, with all her faculties suspended; so that she really did not think at all.

The entrance of her daughters proved a great relief. They informed her, that their brothers were returned from lord Hastings's, and that they were all invited to a masque and ball the following week.—This brought on an hour's consultation upon that important subject, dress; and a summons was sent to Mrs. Bridget to attend her ladies in the wardrobe. Lady Harrington accompanied them, as she was much more solicitous about their appearance than her own.

“ Dear

“ Dear me,” said Bridget, taking out a nice suit of point, “ the country is all
“ in an uproar. As sure as can be, we
“ shall all have a hundred misfortunes
“ that nobody would have thought on ;
“ for the witches are at work all over
“ the world, and neither man nor beast
“ can rest in quiet for them.” — “ How
“ can you be so uncharitable ?” said lady
Harrington. “ You must be convinced
“ that Goody Gaps is no witch ; and I
“ hope there is no person so poor and
“ so neglected in this neighbourhood as
“ she was.” — “ No, my lady,” replied
Bridget, “ there isn’t ; but the witch at
“ the white house is a witch in grain.
“ I have inquired after her ; indeed,
“ your ladyship, she has lived there time
“ out of mind, and has not grown one
“ day older ; — never in her life asked
“ charity ; — always plenty of money in
“ her pocket ; — cures sick folks, be
“ they

“ they never so bad, — and is a true and
“ real witch. I am sure, ladies, you re-
“ member the cruel ague which I had
“ last spring, that shook me limb from
“ limb. Now, one day, when the fit
“ was off, I was taking a walk in the
“ park for a little air. Well, who should
“ I meet but Jenny Hawthorn, with a
“ basket of eggs and other things from
“ her father’s farm, which Mrs. Vincent
“ had ordered. Oh dear Mrs. Bridget,
“ (said she) how poorly you look, quite
“ shocking I declare! (for she is rather
“ an ill-natured thing) you have lost
“ your colour (said she) that used to be
“ as fresh as a daisy, and walk as if you
“ could not set one foot afore t’other.—
“ I have got the ague (said I), and our
“ housekeeper can’t cure me.—Why,
“ then, (says Jenny) don’t you go to the
“ wife woman, for she can cure every
“ body?—I am so weak (says I,) that
“ I could

“ I could not walk so far.—Well (says
“ she), when I have left my things with
“ Mrs. Vincent, I will go home that
“ way, and get you something that shall
“ do you good:—And so we parted. The
“ next day Jenny brought me something
“ which she tied about my neck, some-
“ thing about my wrist, and something
“ very nasty to take, which I thought
“ would have poisoned me ; but in four
“ days I was as well as ever, and my
“ colour came again as fresh as a rose,
“ just as well as it is now.”

“ I think,” said lady Harrington,
“ the feuillemort gown will do for
“ me at lord Hastings’s.”—“ It is
“ certainly very handsome,” said miss
Harrington ; “ but as the colour is so
“ very grave, you must put on all your
“ jewels, for they always shew to advan-
“ tage upon those kinds of colours.”—

“ But as I was saying,” interrupted
Bridget, “ my colour came again as fresh
“ as a rose; and seeing Jenny a little
“ while after, The wise woman has cured
“ me (says I), and I am sure I am
“ obliged to her. What am I to pay?
“ Nothing (said Jenny), for she never
“ takes money of any body.—Why, she
“ is a poor body (says I), isn’t she? —
“ Yes (says Jenny). — Then how does
“ she live? (said I) Does she spin, or
“ go a haymaking? — No (said Jenny).
“ Then how, in the name of good luck,
“ does she live? — She has every thing
“ from our house; I don’t know but she
“ may be a relation of my mother’s,
“ though she never called me cousin
“ yet. But they were very fond of each
“ other; and I dare say she paid well
“ when my mother was alive; and I
“ know she pays my father well now;
“ for I often carry her things, and bring
“ back.

“ affair is finally settled; now for the
“ drawing-room, for I have heard the
“ first dinner-bell some-time.”

Lord Harrington's first appearance showed that he was not well. He did not speak, but looked extremely grave; and as he was naturally a cheerful man, lady Harrington was concerned; but, seeing him eat, she forbore taking notice of it; for the good lady had never learned the unhappy art of tormenting by an impertinent kind of attention to her husband (with “ now do have a little
“ bit of this—or taste that,—you have
“ no appetite to-day — I am afraid you
“ are not well,—does your head ach?—
“ are the spasms coming on in your
“ stomach,—or is your right foot un-
“ easy?—I remember last year, the day
“ before you had that severe fit of the
“ gout, you could not touch a morsel of
“ the

“ the finest haunch of doe venison that
 “ ever was seen.—I hope it is not com-
 “ ing on now.—Thomas, do take care
 “ that the great shoe is well aired this
 “ evening, — it would be a great pity,
 “ indeed, not to have every thing in
 “ order.”—The lady’s knife and fork
 laid down during this harangue; and
 those sitting at the table, and those stand-
 ing behind them, staring at the miserable
 man, whose illness might probably be
 mental, and who for that reason was
 wishing to have it pass unobserved).

Neither could lady Harrington see her
 lord apparently not well without feeling
 severely; but whatever was the cause of
 his being out of spirits, she took no notice
 of it. — When the servants were with-
 drawn and my lord had drunk a few
 glasses of wine, which he took pretty
 quick, he said, “ I have been tired be-

“ yond measure to-day, and plagued out
“ of my life about witches; for I have
“ been told by justice Wood, that the
“ old woman in the White Cottage is
“ absolutely a witch; but as she lives
“ upon my manor he does not like to
“ take notice of her, though he has
“ complaints laid against her every day.
“ I have promised to make inquiries
“ concerning her, and intend doing so
“ as soon as possible; for the lower
“ orders of people are quite in a fer-
“ ment about it. — He says too, that
“ farmer Hawthorn and his family are
“ quite as bad as she is; and I am sorry
“ those industrious people should be
“ implicated; for his farm is small,
“ and by no means a good one, and yet
“ he has brought up his family remark-
“ ably well; there are a great many of
“ them, and they are the best behaved
“ people in the neighbourhood.” —

“ Your

“Your lordship cannot,” said the captain, “do any thing to-day; for, remember, you promised to see my troop out this evening.”—“True,” returned my lord; “I shall therefore defer my inquiries till to-morrow.”

The gentlemen took their horses to ride to Coventry-heath.—“Now,” said Matilda, “I should like to take a walk to the White Cottage, merely to see what sort of a place it is.”—“I have no objection,” said lady Harrington; “but first send to tell Jenny Hawthorn that I want to speak with her in the morning; for I must see that girl, and inquire what she knows concerning the old woman in the White Cottage.”

They walked out, and, when they got through the park, met a labouring man,
and

and inquired the nearest way to the White Cottage. — “The nearest and “pleasantest,” replied the man, “is to “follow the path over that stile, and “then you may get on the brow of the “hill over against it.—But if you want “to go to the house, keep along the “road; for if you go upon the brow of “the hill, as I said before, there will be a “hedge and a ditch between you; but “’tis a pleasant place to look at on the “outside.”—“So we have heard,” said lady Harrington; “and for that reason “we wish to have a view of it. But who “lives there?”—“A witch, they say,” returned the man; “they say too, that “she has done a mass of mischief; but as “she never did any to me, I have no “cause to think ill of her.”—“Did you “ever see her?” inquired lady Harrington.—“Why, yes, I have; and she is “the ugliest old creature I ever did see; “for

“ for she has looked more than a hundred years old these fifteen years, and yet she seems brisk enough too; for I have seen her trotting about her garden like a woman of fifty.—I gathered her apples last year, and she carried in the half-bushel baskets as if they were nothing; and yet to look at her visage, you’d think she came out of the tombs.”

“ I am obliged by your information,” said lady Harrington, giving him something. “ We will go over the fields, and upon the brow of the hill, to see it to advantage.”—They soon reached the hill field; and as they were entering it by the stile two spaniels, which were favourites, overtook them. “ We must keep these dogs in,” said the lady, “ or they will do mischief to the young game. Your father does not like
“ that.

“ that they should range about, as they
“ disturb the partridges. The setters will
“ have no chance, and the sport will be
“ destroyed.”

It was one of those fine evenings just between summer and autumn; the air was extremely warm; not a breath of wind stirring, and the grass-fields had recovered their verdure since the hay had been carried off; the corn fields were in full ear, and the grain in the milk, as the farmers express it. The sun was almost setting, the full-orbed moon rising, and the different lights so beautifully disposed, that to a painter's eye, it was one of the finest scenes in nature.

The hill was partially covered with forest trees of a very old growth, oak, ash, beech, and sycamore; no injurious
axe

axe had ever cropped their flowing honours; but they were spread in full beauty as nature directed.—Tufts of broom grew in patches upon the top and sides of the hill; and at the bottom, next the road, was a low quickset hedge, and a little stream of water. On the other side of the road was the White Cottage. There was also a very large ash, which had many years lost its head by some tremendous storm, on which account the branches had spread much wider from the lower part of the tree; its roots came out of the earth in many a fantastic winding upon the sides of the hill; and mouse-ears, hare-bells, and other wild flowers, grew profusely upon the slope.

“That is the cottage,” said Matilda;
“for see the honeysuckles as the gar-
“dener described.”—“How neat and
“pretty!”

pretty," said Elizabeth; "sure nothing ill can inhabit such a place."—"The contemplation of it," said lady Harrington, "gives me extreme pleasure." Men sitting down upon the roots of the trees, "the weather is so warm, and the scene so delightful, that I must enjoy it for half an hour."—"Perhaps," said Matilda, "that cottage contains a very happy being. She, in all probability, enjoys herself her own way without interruption; and if she has a competence, she must surely be easy in her solitude."

"I should rather suppose, my dear Matilda," said lady Harrington, "that this little retreat contains some woman who, having been ill used by the world, has retired to peace, if not happiness. A little will procure the necessaries of life, and even the com-
"forts,

“forts, for a single solitary being like
“her. She may have been per-
“secuted by her enemies, or forsaken
“by her friends. Perhaps the loss of
“amiable children has made her weary
“of the world, or profligate ones may
“have been the cause of her retreating;
“for there are people in the world who
“will endeavour to lose Care in a bustle,
“while others will boldly encounter
“him by themselves.”—“Surely,” said
Miss Harrington, “the solitary must
“have the strongest and best formed
“mind.”—“Undoubtedly,” said her
mother; “if our reflections can sooth,
“ease, and acquit us to ourselves, we
“have no reason for being unhappy.”—
“But,” said Matilda, “if people do
“things that are not right, do you think,
“madam, they can be happy?”—
“Certainly not,” said lady Harring-
ton.

The

The spaniels had been forgotten, and they were ranging over the hill, brushing through the broom, and hunting the ditches, when one of them opened. "Come here, Ranger; come here, Flora;" said Matilda. But they still continued the cry, when Matilda, jumping up, followed the opening of the dogs to a tuft of broom. The moment she came up to them, they rushed into the midst of it, and an enormously large cat flew out, leaped over the hedge and rivulet, ran to the cottage, and jumped over the pales into the garden; the spaniels pursued and got into the garden also; two cats came out of the cottage to assist their companion, and the dogs could not leap the pales back again, the earth being lower on the inside, and the spaniels cried most pitifully. Matilda, in a fright, crossed the rivulet, and ran to the cottage, when she

she saw a woman coming out of an arbour at the end of the garden, who said, "Young lady, if my cats have injured your spaniels, I am sorry for it; I wish to keep them within my premises, but they will ramble after the birds." — "Indeed," answered Matilda, "the dogs were in the wrong, and I have taken the liberty of entering your garden to bring them back." She was now very near the woman, and found her face frightful on account of the badness of her complexion; but she walked strong and erect; her eyes seemed to be good and lively, her teeth sound, and her hair was entirely hidden by her dress. "I have fatigued myself," said Matilda; "will you have the goodness to give me a little water?" The old woman went into the house, and brought out a horn full, which Matilda drank and then wished her a good evening.

Lady

Lady and Miss Harrington were in great agitation concerning Matilda; as she did not go into the house, they kept their eyes upon her, and went close to the hedge to meet her; but finding they could not get to her, nor Matilda to them, she resolved to walk round to the stile to meet them.

As Matilda walked on, she met a girl about thirteen years of age, with a basket wrapt up with great care. "What have you got there, my good girl?"—"A hot roast chicken."—"And who is it for?"—"The old woman in the White House," said the girl; "my sister Jenny has cook'd it nicely for her supper."—"And what is her name?" asked Matilda.—"My mother's friend," replied the girl. "What, my good child?" demanded Matilda. "My mother's friend,"

said the girl as loud as she could bawl;
“for I never heard any other name that
“she had, and I have known her ever
“since I was a little thing not so high.
“My father’s name is farmer Haw-
“thorn, and I have got a great many
“brothers and sisters.”—“You are a
“good girl, I dare say,” replied Ma-
tilda, giving her something; “make
“haste, or your chicken will be cold.”

Lady and Miss Harrington met Ma-
tilda at the style. “Well,” said Eli-
zabeth, “you have seen the witch;
“and pray what kind of personage is
“she?”—“Why, her complexion is so
“shocking, that she certainly (as the
“old man said), looks as if she came
“out of the tombs. I wanted to get
“into the house; but it being a visit
“of chance, or rather an intrusion, I
“dared not invite myself in. Her
“dress

‘ drefs was something like a nun’s ;
‘ the petticoat was of light brown stuff,
‘ and a kind of white open gown over
‘ it, which came down to the wrists,
‘ and tied about the waist with a brown
‘ ribband ; a round-ear’d cap close to
‘ her abominably ugly face, and a plain
‘ brown ribband upon that. Her ad-
‘ drefs was not at all like that of the
‘ lower order of people, and she had
‘ something dignified about her.”—
“ Then,” said Elizabeth, “ she may be
“ some nun run away from a convent ;
“ I have heard strange stories of fathers
“ in England condemning their chil-
“ dren to a monastick life. This thought
“ has just struck me.”

“ And I do not think it an impro-
“ bable one,” said lady Harrington.
“ That may be the reason why she con-
“ ceals herself, leading the life of a nun

“ in a cottage, instead of a convent.
“ And in my opinion it would be wrong
“ to disturb her, whatever the motive
“ may be. As to witchcraft, I again
“ assure myself that there is no such
“ thing; but we must make some in-
“ quiries; for justice Wood has ex-
“ torted a promise from my lord to
“ that effect.”

As soon as they returned to the abbey, Bridget met them. “ Dear me, my lady, there is poor dear Flora’s ear all over gore blood.”—“ The old woman’s cats at the cottage scratched her,” said Matilda. “ Oh, la! and what shall we do now?” said Bridget. “ Why, take her into the still-room, and tell Vincent to put something to it. I beg pardon, young lady; but pray did you see the witch? and what in the world could she be like?
“ and

“and what could she be dressed up in?” said Bridget.—“Her dress,” replied Matilda, “was in shape very like a nun’s.”—“Then, as sure as fate,” said Bridget, “she is that same nun that goody Dickens and her husband said so much about, and I could never make it out; and as she has not walk’d at the abbey, that I know of, since we have been here, perhaps the poor soul was frightened at having so many folks in the house, and was forced to take up with a cottage at last.”

“Flora’s ear is bleeding; do take her to Vincent,” said Matilda. Bridget went off, calling the spaniel after her. The moment she reached the house-keeper’s room she opened the business. “There is what will do her good,” said Vincent, taking down a vial; “but
c 3 “if

“ I want to know, young woman,” said lady Harrington, “ if you have any acquaintance with the old woman at the White Cottage.”—“ Yes, my lady, it is my father’s house; but my mother’s friend has made it so nice! It was a sad place when my father first bought it, many years ago, as I have heard him say; and he was afraid that he never should have let it.”—“ I wanted to know if you were well acquainted with her.”—“ O yes, my lady, ever since I was born.”—“ And was she any relation?”—“ Not that I know of, my lady; but my mother was as fond of her as if she had been her own sister; so I suppose that she was a-kin to her; my poor mother, who is now dead and gone, never thought any thing nice enough for her; and I know that she pays for it all.”—“ Where does she get the money?” said

faid my lady. " Out of the box which
" stands in her bed-room, please your
" ladyship; I have often seen her take
" it out, but she never pays till it
" comes to gold.—She has been very
" good indeed to me; has taught me
" to read and write (and now I keep
" all our accounts); shewed me how
" to work; gave me money to buy a
" fine bible and a prayer-book; and
" has done us all a deal of good. I
" often walk with her in the woods by
" moonlight, and so did my mother."—
" And what is her name?" faid lady
Harrington. " We never call her any
" thing but my mother's friend, my
" lady."—" Did you never hear any
" other?"—" No, indeed, my lady,
" I never did. She has a vast many
" books; her house is set forth with
" flowers; and her garden is very nice,
" and full of fruit, which she gives us

“a great deal of.”—“Is she a well-
“looking woman?” said her ladyship.
“No, my lady; her face seems to be
“black and ash colour, instead of red
“and white; but she is very good in-
“deed, and would not hurt a hair of
“any body’s head; and if my little
“finger does but ache, she seems so
“sorry! and when my poor mother
“died, I thought she would have died
“too.”

“I thank you for your informa-
tion,” said my lady; “and tell your
“father that my lord would be glad
“to see him in the evening upon some
“business.”

The Miss Harringtons and the cap-
tain were present at this examination.
“I think,” said the latter, “this girl
“is almost handsome enough to be
“witch

“witch me.”—“Oh,” replied Matilda, “nothing near so beautiful as lady Naunton.”—“I approve extremely,” he answered, “of lady Naunton, and should prefer her as a friend at the war-office; yet I think Jonny Hawthorn would look very pretty upon a baggage-waggon.”

“I beg, John, you would not talk nonsense to that good girl; she is the stay and manager of her father’s house.”—“My good prudent Elizabeth,” said the captain, “do you think I can see a tall, stait, slim girl, with a fine rosy complexion, without admiring her? no, to be sure; but rest satisfied that I will not make the girl vain. Besides, you know, lady Naunton and Bellona are the objects of my adoration.”—“I wish,” replied Elizabeth, “that you would sacrifice

“ crifice a little at the shrine of Miner-
“ va.”—“ I do intend it this very even-
“ ing; and I am now ruminating upon a
“ visit to the witch. If she be inclined
“ to peace, so am I; we will then hold
“ a little friendly parly; but I shall
“ gird on my sword; and if war is
“ what she prefers, I will first attack
“ and rout those myrmidons her cats,
“ then bring off the caitiff witch pri-
“ soner, and you shall set your fair
“ foot upon her neck, in token of your
“ sovereignty and her obedience.”—
“ But do you really intend to pay her
“ a visit?”—“ I do, this very evening.
“ You will probably be seeking reasons
“ for my running such hazard of my
“ precious life, not forgetting my still
“ dearer reputation; but curiosity
“ prompts me on; and as Jenny Haw-
“ thorn declares she is the best creature
“ living, I have a mind to see her. I
“ therefore

“ therefore go armed at all points,
“ armed with curiosity. I am sure,
“ Matilda, you had none, my dear
“ sister, when you leaped a most tre-
“ mendous hedge, swam across a gaping
“ gulph, and scaled the castle walls of
“ this renowned witch, to rescue from
“ the horrible talons of the fiercest cat
“ that ever was kittened your dear de-
“ licate puppies, who were both wound-
“ ed in the skirmish. Suppose I
“ take them with me, and have an-
“ other set to this evening.”—“ No,
“ no,” said Matilda, “ if you must go,
“ go gently.”

“ I will, I will,” he replied; “ I go,
“ I fly to deliver the princess with the
“ ash-coloured complexion from the
“ tortures which that cruel magician
“ justice Wood has in store for her;
“ and if I should not return by ten
“ o’clock,

THE WITCH, AND THE

“ o’clock, you may with great certainty
“ conclude, that we are gone to Lapland
“ upon two of the swiftest broomsticks
“ that ever were crossed, to partake of
“ a delicious roasted tyger stuffed with
“ tenpenny nails.”

Dinner and justice Wood were an-
nounced at the same time.—“ I am
“ come, my lord,” said the justice,
“ because I would not give your lord-
“ ship the trouble of sending about the
“ business which I mentioned to you.—
“ The people are so clamourous and
“ pressing, that I dare say it would be
“ a great pleasure to them to see the
“ witch ducked and then burnt.”—
“ I think, sir,” returned my lord,
“ that positive proofs of guilt ought to
“ be had before any thing of that sort
“ should be thought of. Life and re-
“ putation are very valuable things; and
“ as

“ as I never heard that this woman had
“ hurt a single individual, you and I
“ had better see her, and hear what she
“ has to say.”—“ I would rather not
“ meddle in such a business,” said the
justice ; “ but bring her before me pro-
“ perly, and I am at your lordship’s ser-
“ vice.”—“ I am going to her this even-
“ ing, fir,” said the captain; “ will you do
“ me the favour to accompany me?”—
“ No, fir,” returned the justice; “ for
“ a man like me to be going into
“ cottages would never do.”—“ But,
“ fir,” replied the captain, “ this would
“ be a visit of humanity.”—“ Not to
“ me, fir,” said the justice; “ for if I
“ demeaned myself, it might hurt my
“ reputation as a magistrate, which is a
“ very tender point; but if you, fir,
“ will see and hear all you can, I shall
“ be ready to take your deposition in
“ the morning when I have all my peo-
“ ple

“ple about me.”—“Suppose, sir, that
“I should neither hear, see, nor find
“out any thing but a mere old wo-
“man?”—“That, sir, is almost im-
“possible; for I know from farmer
“Hawthorn, that she has money to pay
“for things which must amount to a
“pretty round sum in the year, with-
“out receiving a penny from any per-
“son that ever I could find.”—“Far-
“mer Hawthorn!—The farmer will
“soon be here,” said my lord;
“and if you will do me the favour to
“stay and hear what he says, you will
“be better able to form your judge-
“ment, and decide without prejudice
“hereafter; for we must, my dear sir,
“be guided by truth.”—“Oh, I shall
“be soon ready, my lord; I have all
“my business at my fingers ends; but
“as your lordship wishes me to stay, I
“shall

“ shall hear and say nothing. This is
“ not a place for me to open in.”

“ Here comes farmer Hawthorn,”
said my lord; “ now we shall hear
“ what he will say.”—The captain got
up, nodded to his sisters, and went out.

“ Farmer Hawthorn,” said my lord,
“ how do you do? I hope your family
“ are well.”—“ Pretty hearty, I thank
“ your lordship.”—“ That fourteen-
“ acre field of wheat of your’s looks
“ well,” said my lord.—“ It does in-
“ deed, my lord; and if please God the
“ weather be fine, I hope to get five
“ quarters an acre off it.”—“ You and
“ your sons take a great deal of pains,
“ and I should be sorry it did not an-
“ swer.”—“ Thank your lordship,”
said the farmer.—“ Your daughter,”
said my lady, “ seems to be a clever
“ young

“ young woman, and must be of great
“ use and assistance to you in the house.”
—“ Yes, indeed, my lady, she is a
“ stirring girl, and is a great help in-
“ deed. Ever since the death of my
“ poor wife, Jenny has been a great
“ help to me. Her sister did not take
“ to the business at all. She is married
“ to a Scotch quarter-master, who seems
“ to be a thriving man, and I hope
“ will make her a good husband.
“ Jenny can keep accounts, and do
“ many things that are useful; but I
“ am obliged to my wife’s friend for
“ that, and a great deal more, for she
“ has been quite a mother to Jenny.”
—“ Is she very old?”—“ No, my
“ lady, I believe not; I don’t know
“ her age though.”—“ She is an old
“ hag as ever was born,” said the
justice.—“ She is not very comely,
“ to be sure,” replied the farmer,
“ please

“ please your worship ; but she can stir
“ about nimbly enough.”—“ She has
“ made such a stir in this county,”
said the justice, “ as may cost her her
“ life if she is brought before me, an
“ infernal old ——.” — “ She is the
“ harmleffest creature that ever lived,”
replied the farmer ; “ your worship
“ knows law and such-like——” — “ I
“ hope I do,” replied the justice ; “ and
“ if I did not, I don’t think farmer Haw-
“ thorn could give me any insight into
“ the business.” — “ But as I was saying,
“ your worship, she is indeed as harm-
“ less a creature as ever trod upon the
“ earth ; so mild, so gentle, and must
“ have had good learning when she
“ was young.” — “ Yes,” replied the
justice, “ and she exercises her learning
“ now she is old, to my knowledge.” —
“ That she does indeed, and please your
“ worship ; for she has taught my chil-
“ dren

“dren one after another to read and
“write, and, what is better than that,
“their duty.”—“And what is their
“duty towards their neighbour?” said
the justice.—“Why, if they can’t speak
“well of them, never to mention them
“at all.”—“You are a good divine,
“Mr. Hawthorn,” said my lord;
“and I do not doubt but Mr. Wood is
“equally so; and in that point you
“will agree. But I want to know,
“farmer, how long you have been ac-
“quainted with this good old woman.”
—The farmer stopped and seemed at a
loss. “Why don’t you speak?” said
the justice. “Speak out, man.”—
“Why, if Jenny was here now, she
“would tell me directly.”—“You are
“out in your examination,” said the
justice. “Yes,” replied the farmer,
“she could tell me to a day how old
“my eldest boy is; for the old woman
“and

“and my wife came into this part of the
“country just one year and a half before
“he was born.”—“How long do you
“suppose?” said my lord. “One or
“two and twenty years,” returned the
farmer.—“And what was your wife’s
“name, and where did she come from?”
—“Ay, where did she come from,”
said the justice.—“She came out of
“Sussex,” replied the farmer; “but I
“don’t think I ever heard her men-
“tion the name of the parish where she
“was born, though I have heard her
“talk of York and Yorkshire?”—
“And how did you meet with her?”
said my lord.—“Why, one day, my
“lord, at Coventry Fair, I thought
“her the prettiest girl I had ever seen;
“she sat cracking nuts in a booth with
“some folks whom I knew; so I went
“and bought a pocket full, and sat
“down with them, and we were mar-
“ried

“ried in about three months after.”—
“And where did she live at that
“time?”—“At a farm-house, your ho-
“nour; they boarded there; for my
“wife and the old woman were great
“friends. Mary had a little money,
“and I bought that White Cottage with
“it; her friend repaired it, has lived
“there ever since, and has had every
“thing from my house, which she has
“honestly paid for, rent and all, be-
“sides doing my children so much
“good.”

“But what is the old woman’s
“name?” said lady Harrington. “I
“don’t rightly know, my lady; but
“from what I have heard them talk of
“York, and all that, I think her name
“was Howard.”—“Was she handsome
“when you first knew her, Mr. Haw-
“thorn?” said Matilda. “No, young
“lady,

“ lady, her beauty is not outside show ;
“ but it is all goodness of heart, which
“ is better by half ; and, according to my
“ judgment, she is as handsome now as
“ ever she was. But my wife was as
“ fine and as comely a lass as you
“ would wish to see in a summer’s day.”
—“ And what was her name ?”—
“ Mary Dawson, my lady.”

“ And you really believe the old
“ woman came from York ?” said my
lord. “ Yes,” replied the farmer ;
“ but I do not often see her. How-
“ ever, if you please, my lord, I can
“ go to-morrow morning, and ask her.”
—“ No,” said my lady, “ we will not
“ give you that trouble.”

“ Where does the old devil get the
“ money she pays you ?” said the jus-
tice. “ Indeed, I don’t know,” re-
plied

plied the farmer. "My wife often told
" me, that she was well to live; and
" my business takes up so much of my
" time, that I never trouble myself
" about other folks."—"So then," re-
turned the justice, "you perhaps
" don't know that she is a witch, and
" can make gold as easily as your
" daughter can dumplings."—"No
" man shall persuade me to that,"
said the farmer; "no, not the king,
" if he stood here and told me so. And
" I hope, my lord, your honour will
" not believe any such thing."—
"What do you dispute my words?"
said the Justice.—"Yes, I do," re-
turned the farmer; "I think your
" worship is mistaken."—"Why, she is
" a nuisance to the neighbourhood,"
said the justice; "no man's cattle is
" safe for her; she either lames or de-
" stroys them."—"That I can't think
" neither,"

“neither,” replied the farmer; “for
“what good could it do her? I never
“had any thing hurt by her, and I
“have lost many fine horses, and cows
“too, in my time; but I could always
“make out how.”

“She would not hurt her friend,”
said the justice; “but I see that you
“are in league with her—in league
“with a witch; and I suppose you will
“pretend to say, that she does not en-
“ertain familiars in the shape of cats.”
—“That she don’t,” replied the farmer;
“they are real cats, and very good ones
“for vermin. She had them from
“me.”

“Mr. Wood,” said my lord, “we
“have, I think, no proof yet of this
“woman’s being a witch; and you
“and Hawthorn have argued for and
VOL. II. D “against

“ against her, but without coming to
“ any point. My son is gone this
“ evening to visit her; probably we
“ may be able to form some judgment
“ on his return; and if you will let
“ the matter rest a day or two, I
“ shall be much obliged to you; for I
“ think at present we have no right to
“ carry her before a magistrate. She
“ may be perfectly innocent; and it
“ cannot be pleasant to be exposed to
“ the gaze of a mob.”

“ You are too tender, my lord, a
“ great deal too tender; but, to be
“ sure, to oblige your lordship, I will
“ defer it; though I shall have reflec-
“ tions cast upon me, and reflections
“ are not pleasant things.”—“ I will be
“ answerable, sir, for all the reflec-
“ tions this business may occasion; and I
“ wish

“with you a good evening,” said my
ord.

“Ah,” said the farmer, looking at
the door as he spoke, “how I should
like to thrash him! To endeavour to
take a poor innocent creature’s cha-
racter from her.”—“I am in hopes
that she does not deserve what he
reports of her,” said lady Harring-
ton.

“Bless your ladyship,” said the far-
mer, “I wish your honours good night.”

The captain walked to the White
House, and saw the old woman with a
book in her hand, sitting in a porch
covered with honey-suckles. “May I
come in?” said he, holding the wick-
et in his hand. “If you wish it, sir,”
returned the witch; “but I am not

“ much used to such visitors as you
“ seem to be.”—“ I come abruptly,
“ and perhaps impertinently,” he re-
plied; “ but when I have informed
“ you of my reasons, I hope you will
“ forgive me. First, I am to apologize
“ for my sister’s intrusion last night;
“ and then I come, as a volunteer, to
“ inform you of a circumstance which
“ may not be so agreeable. My sister
“ told us, that you had the man-
“ ners and deportment of a gentlewo-
“ man, and seemed to have every thing
“ convenient and comfortable, which
“ shewed that you did not want pecu-
“ niary assistance. I will not, there-
“ fore, offend by offering you any.
“ [*She bowed.*] But the neighbourhood
“ have taken it into their heads (from
“ what cause I know not) that you
“ practise witchcraft. They have ap-
“ plied to a justice of peace, and he
“ informed

“ informed my father, lord Harrington, of it, who has desired him to be quiet for a few days, till we should make enquiries. Jenny Hawthorn told us, that you were the best woman in the world; and my mother desired me to say, that if you wished for the protection of our family, it was much at your service.”

“ I am more obliged to you, sir, than I can express,” replied the witch. “ The protection of lord Harrington’s family will be of singular service. The idea which the world falsely entertains of witchcraft is very unaccountable. I am no witch, I can assure you. I have lived here peaceably, I may say happily, many years; and am, as you see, a strange old figure. I have long left the world, and supposed, that, excepting

“ a few individuals, it thought no more
 “ of me than I did of it. I hope,
 “ young gentleman, the honour you
 “ have done me will not disgrace the
 “ motive, as that motive proceeded
 “ from humanity. Will you eat any
 “ fruit? [*taking down a basket,*] its only
 “ merit is its being fresh gathered.”

He accepted the offer, and then
 made his bow, telling her that she
 should hear from him in the morning.

“ What a man is that justice Wood!”
 said Miss Harrington. “ You class
 “ him too high, sister,” replied Matilda;
 “ he is a reptile, a very reptile.”—
 “ Have patience, girls,” said lady Har-
 rington, “ and recollect what he was.
 “ His father was a very ignorant man,
 “ and not very rich; but he had a sis-
 “ ter, a widow, who was; she put this
 “ boy

“ boy under a country attorney, where
“ he remained a few years, when his
“ master dismissed him for idleness and
“ stupidity. He then went into the
“ Low Countries as a subaltern under
“ sir Philip Sidney, who cashiered him
“ for cowardice. The old woman, his
“ aunt, died; he married a woman of
“ fortune, and so came into this situa-
“ tion; he is, however, continually ex-
“ posing himself, and pays for his
“ folly.”

“ But I am in love with farmer
“ Hawthorn,” said Matilda; “ his sto-
“ ries are a little roundabout; but he
“ seems to have such an affection for
“ his family, and to be so anxious to
“ protect the old woman’s character,
“ that I really love him.”—“ Gently,
“ good Matilda,” said Robert. “ What
“ would Wingfield say, if I were to in-
“ form

“form him of this passion of your’s?
“why, he would run the poor farmer
“through the body.”—“Well,” re-
plied Matilda, “if Wingfield do not
“love the farmer, as well as I do,
“ (that is, when he is acquainted with
“the cause of my love,) I will not love
“him; so you may tell him as soon as
“you please.”—“Yes,” answered Ro-
bert, “and then you will wear the wil-
“low garland, and we shall have an-
“other Ophelia. But here comes
“John, and without the captive witch;
“I therefore conclude that he is con-
“quered.”

“Well, noble captain,” said Matil-
da, “have you been overcome by the
“forcerefs and her cats?”—“Too
“true,” he replied; “the charms of
“this Circe have entirely vanquished the
“redoubted John Harrington; her
“spells

“spells and incantations were so potent, that she wanted not the aid of her myrmidons, who only peeped at me, as if afraid that I should rival them in the good graces of their lovely mistress; and as the event is likely to be handed down to posterity, I am content to be vanquished by the fair sex, although not one of the most beautiful.”

“A truce with your nonsense,” said lady Harrington, “and tell us what she said to you.” He then briefly related the particulars of his visit, and added, “She has that kind of manner about her which made me very civil and polite; and you must see her to-morrow, or my rival, Mr. Wood, may carry her off.”—“We will send early,” said lady Harrington, “and desire that she will come to dinner.”

“ My black palfrey shall be saddled for
“ her, and you, fir knight, may go
“ and be her guard.” That was an
honour he could not refuse, if the lady
accepted him. “ Now tell us,” said
Miss Harrington, “ how was her house
“ furnished, and how did she look?”

“ Imprimis,” said the Captain, “ a
“ nice boarded floor, which I verily
“ believe was of oak. Item, a small
“ chimney, with a couple of andirons,
“ ornamented with brass dogs heads;
“ the hearth and chimney-piece of
“ Portland stone; and over it was a
“ shelf, on which stood pots of flowers.
“ Item, a large table covered with
“ books, pens, ink, and paper, a terres-
“ trial globe, and an hour-glass. Upon
“ a plain oak bracket stood a basket of
“ fruit, divided into compartments.
“ Over the table were shelves of books;
“ I wanted

“ I wanted to see their titles, that I
“ might find out her particular study ;
“ but I thought it would be impertinent
“ to look too near them. A linnet was
“ hanging in a cage near the window.
“ A high-back'd chair, and two or three
“ others, extremely plain, was, I think,
“ the whole of her furniture.”

“ Was the witch beautiful ?” said
Miss Harrington. “ Not near so hand-
“ some,” he replied, “ as lady Naun-
“ ton ; and yet her features seemed
“ good, as did her eyes also ; but she
“ has such a strange-coloured com-
“ plexion that it looks like a toad’s
“ back. Three or four miniature pic-
“ tures hung near the fire ; and now I
“ hope I have been sufficiently minute
“ to satisfy your curiosity, ladies.”—
“ Quite so,” said his mother ; “ we
“ shall see her to-morrow, and shall
“ then

“ then be able to judge whether you have
“ given us a good copy of the original.”

Mrs. Bridget had heard something about the justice's coming concerning the witch, and assured herself that the latter would soon be destroyed by fire and faggot. She had picked up a great deal about it, and wanted to have seen the farmer ; but he went off sooner than she expected. She was, however, resolved to know all, and therefore trotted to Jenny Hawthorn's, purposely to have a discourse concerning witches.— When she arrived at the farm, “ So, here is a fine to do !” throwing herself into a chair. “ We shall be all taken for witches !—aye, you may stare ; and your father, and you, and for aught I know, myself, may be suspected.”—“ If it is the last day I have to live,” replied Jenny, “ I do
“ not

“not know a witch, nor any thing
“like a witch, in the world.”—“Fine
“talking,” said Bridget, “when you
“are as fond of one of them as can
“be.”—“Good gracious! who could
“be so wicked as to say so?”—“Say
“so!” returned Bridget, “have not
“you, your ownself, more than once
“invited me to go with you and see the
“witch in the White Cottage?”—
“You take her for one then,” said
Jenny.—“Yes, I do; and so does every
“body else, justice Wood and all; and
“I warrant he will trim her jacket, an
“old ill-conditioned——”—“I will not
“stand,” said Jenny, “and hear so
“good a woman belied.”—“You
“won’t,” returned Bridget; “but I
“say you shall hear me tell you, that
“she is an old ill-conditioned hag; and
“more than that, she ought to be burnt
“alive,

“ alive, and I shall not be sorry to see
“ it.”—“ Well,” said Jenny, “ I never
“ heard the like;” and she walked
about the room in great agitation.
“ You’ll be used to it soon enough
“ then; and as for your pacing and
“ fidgetting, what good will that do?
“ I’m sure our family has been plagued
“ enough, one how or other. Why,
“ there was Mrs. Vincent, poor dear
“ soul! almost lost her life with jaunt-
“ ing after one of them.”—“ But she
“ was no witch,” said Jenny.—“ That
“ is more than you know,” returned
Bridget; “ and depend upon it, before
“ another week is over your head, you
“ will find the difference. Here I came
“ broiling all the way from the abbey,
“ as your friend, to tell you all this, and
“ get nō thanks neither; and now I
“ shall cool myself by walking slowly
“ back

“back again, after having had all this
“trouble for your good, to tell you
“how things went.”

Jenny, vexed to the soul, sat down and cried. In a quarter of an hour her father came in. “What is the matter, my girl? what do you fret for? has any thing gone wrong?”—“Yes; my good friend in the cottage is taken for a witch (so Mrs. Bridget says), and will be burnt alive.”—“Come, don’t take on; my good lord and lady will take care of her; besides, she is no more a witch than I am. Come, dry your eyes, and get me my supper. I came from the abbey just now, and my lord and lady are her friends, and the young captain is gone to see her, which is another good piece of news.”

In

In the morning orders were given to the steward to send one of the servants with a note to the White Cottage. He gave it to one of the serving-men, and it was transferred by him to the head groom, who said there wanted no horse to go a mile. The serving-man said, the orders were for it to be sent off immediately, and it would be sooner there on horseback. "No," returned the groom; "do you, William, run over the fields with it." William was wanted at breakfast; the groom then called Jack. When Jack made his appearance, the horses under his care were going to be bled that very minute.—The yardman was crossing by them; and the groom said, "Peter, take this letter, and run over the fields with it, to the White Cottage."—"I'm old," said the man, "and never was any great runner; " then.

“ then I have a pain in my hip besides ;
“ and what would Nan Dairy say if I
“ was to leave the cows, and not carry
“ in the milk? why, tell the steward
“ mayhap, or else Mrs. Vincent; and
“ then there would be the devil to do,
“ and I might lose my place. ’Tis no
“ bread and butter of mine; there is
“ a witch lives there, and I would not
“ go near the place for something,
“ that I would not.”

The captain’s man was returning from airing his charger. “ Do, good
“ Thomas,” said the groom, “ ride
“ that horse to the White Cottage;
“ carry this note, and bring back an
“ answer.”—“ This horse,” said Tho-
mas, “ is not to be hack’d about;
“ but let me have another, and I will
“ be there and back in a twinkling.”—
“ Mayhap upon a broomstick,” said
the

the yardman, "for a witch lives there."
—"Then I'll go of no such errands,"
replied Thomas. "What, a foldier and
"afraid!" said the groom; "you must
"be a fine fellow indeed!"—"I'm not
"fearful of French nor Spaniards,"
said Thomas; "but witchcraft is such
"a thing! what would weapons signify
"against her? no more than a straw or
"a rush."

A boy about ten years old making
his appearance, "Where are you
"going?" said the groom.—"To Nan
"Dairy, for a little milk. My lady
"bid my mother send every morning."
—"Can you run?" said the groom.
Yes, he could beat all the boys in the
parish at that.—"Can you run to the
"White House and back, by the time
"the abbey clock strikes eight?"—
Yes, if he might go through the park.
"Well,

“ Well,” said the groom, “ I will
“ give you this penny, and Peter will
“ take your jug to the dairy; mind
“ that you give this paper to an old
“ woman who lives there, and bring
“ another back; and if you should
“ chance to see any of the keepers, tell
“ them I sent you.”

“ Surely,” said the captain’s man,
“ she won’t bewitch the child.”—
“ What if she do, Tom?” answered the
groom, “ it will not hurt us.”—“ I
“ wish I had gone myself,” said Tom.—
“ I wish you had,” replied the groom;
“ it would have saved a penny in my
“ pocket.”—“ I shall be uneasy all my
“ life.” said Tom, “ if he comes to
“ any harm. I wish the note had been
“ sent by the captain, for then I *must*
“ have gone; I *must* have *obeyed orders*
“ or have been shot.”—“ The devil you
“ must,”

“ must,” replied the groom; “ and yet,
“ as much a man of valour as you are,
“ you dare not face an old woman.”

“ But I dare face you,” said Tom, knocking down the groom; “ and that
“ is my answer.” The groom lay sprawling upon the stones with his face bloody, roaring out that he was half-murdered, when the boy came back breathless, and said, that he could not get over the park pales. “ Now,” sighed the groom, “ how I am to get
“ this note to the old hag, I know no
“ more than the dead.”—“ Let me
“ have a horse,” said Tom.—“ Take
“ Lively,” returned the groom.—Tom mounted without a saddle, and was out of sight in a minute. “ The devil go
“ with you,” said the groom, wiping his face; “ I wish the witch may fly
“ away with you for a hard-fisted rascal.”

When

When the note was delivered, "What goodness and humanity must this family possess," said the witch to herself, "to consider an object like myself worth their attention!"

The answer was written, and Tom returned. "Who is to take care of that horse that you have rode so hard?" said the groom.—"Myself," replied Tom; "and do you carry this note into the house."—The groom hung his head, and walked slowly and reluctantly into the house. The note was given to lady Harrington, and contained these words:

"The object of lady Harrington's attention and charity will be ready to wait upon, and thank her ladyship and family, when they do her the honour of sending."

"Order

“Order the black palfrey and the captain’s horse to be at the White Cottage by eleven,” said lady Harrington.

The servingman to whom these orders were given met Bridget. “The witch is coming here,” said the man. “Heavens forbid!” replied the waiting-gentlewoman: “what can have bewitched my lady to suffer such a thing?”—“Her own palfrey is ordered to fetch the hag.”—“Then they are all as sure as can be quite lunatic. Well, I have wished and wished a hundred times, that we had never come to this horrible place; for if you go on the outside on’t by moonlight, there are so many ins and outs, that the very stones seem to frown at one, and I am ready to die with fear. Then the bats
“ flutter,

“ flutter, and the owls keep such a
“ hooting, and the nightingales shriek-
“ ing and jugging all night; and all
“ day long we hear nothing but swal-
“ lows and martins twittering. I would
“ rather by half hear the London cries,
“ because there is nothing to fright one,
“ and always something to see.”—“ I
“ can’t help it,” said the man; “ but I
“ shall be very civil to her, and so must
“ you too, or it will be the worse for us
“ both; for *them there* creatures are as
“ malicious as monkies.”

“ There must,” said Miss Harrington, after reading the note, “ be
“ something very singular in the old
“ woman’s story.”—“ Perhaps not,”
returned my lady. “ People feel the
“ evils of life differently; there are
“ those who suffer excessively, yet are
“ too proud of heart to complain;
“ whereas

“whereas many poor wretches are
“whining and plaguing all their friends
“with foolish accounts of their mishaps,
“and miseries, which are of no conse-
“quence either to themselves or to their
“hearers.”—“Their friends must be
“prodigiously obliged to them,” said
Matilda; “for such narratives must be
“wonderfully entertaining.”—“There
“is something in self,” returned lady
Harrington, “so extremely interesting
“to ourselves, that many individuals
“fancy every thing in which they are
“concerned must equally concern
“others.”

“The witch is come, my lady,”
said a servingman. “I do not like her
“being called by that name,” observed
lady Harrington; “say, the person
“from the Cottage.” The man had seen
her, and had never beheld any thing so
frightful.

some flower-pots, which had been just filled; Matilda took it and sprinkled her face. "Open the window, Bridget," said Miss Harrington. Bridget was too confused to understand any thing; but snatching the jug suddenly from Matilda, across the witch, turned the whole contents over her face, which made her sigh as if returning to life. "Take this handkerchief," said lady Harrington; "you have drowned her."—"No,—yes, my lady," returned Bridget, and began to rub her face wet as it was; but the moment after she exclaimed, "Gracious me, I shall die!" and fell upon the floor. The captain, without attending to Bridget, took out his handkerchief, and, wiping the stranger's face, saw that the colour came off. He continued wiping, and found a good florid complexion. He then said, "Permit me to assist you to
" the

“the window; the air will relieve you;” then taking a chair, he seated her with her face to the light.—Bridget was still lying with her hands clinched and foaming at the mouth, when Mrs. Vincent and the other servants came and carried her away. The captain then addressing his mother said, “See, madam, how much the air of the Abbey has improved this person.”

Lady Harrington directed her eyes towards her, seemed surprized, sat down, got up, and looked at her again. At that instant certain received ideas of the power of witches took entire possession of her imagination.—“In the name of every thing holy,” she exclaimed, “what are you? Are you an inhabitant of this earth, or a phantom that deceives my sight with the idea of a departed friend?”—Then, seeming to

recollect herself, she cried, "Avaunt, nor by your diabolical arts torture me, by taking a resemblance of my dear Matilda Devereux." Nature could support it no longer, and she fainted. Miss Harrington sunk into a chair; Matilda trembled; the witch explained to the captain who she was; and by their assistance, and the aid of a smelling-bottle, lady Harrington seemed returning to life, when the captain conducted the stranger into another room.

Lady Harrington burst into tears, and asked for my lord. He had ridden out.—"Oh, my children!" she said mournfully, "I must leave you; I have seen a phantom so like my once-loved friend, that I think I am called away to another world. Her eyes seem to have lost their lustre, and the
" beautiful

“ beautiful expression of her counte-
“ nance is flown; yet still there was a
“ benignity of look.—Why, beloved
“ shade! why not speak to your Isabel-
“ la? Alas, I prevented it; for I re-
“ collect a mist came before my eyes as
“ I pronounced Matilda Devereux, and
“ you vanished!”

Her daughters and the captain, seeing her recovered, explained by degrees the cause of her terror; begged that she would compose herself; and when she could bear the sight of her friend, they would introduce her. The captain then shewed her a ring, with this motto: *To the memory of a beloved son.* “ It must be my friend Matilda Devereux,” said lady Harrington; “ this
“ ring was given her by my mother, as
“ a remembrance of my brother Wil-
“ liam, who gallantly fell in the Low
“ Countries.

“ Countries. I beg that I may see her;
“ I am now prepared to meet her.”

Lady Matilda was led in by the captain; and her reception was such as might be expected after so many years separation.

Lady Matilda soon recovered her spirits, and said, “ My dear lady Harrington, time is a cruel destroyer. “ You lost in me a young friend, and “ now find me an old one. I look like “ the mother of your Matilda Devereux; but I am an old maid, and “ cannot aspire to that honour.”

A thousand questions were asked, and few answers returned. The young people, who had been almost in despair, fearing their mother might lose her senses, recovered themselves; and lady Harrington

Harrington wanting to know every thing at once, lady Matilda said, “To
“ you, my dear friend, the history of
“ my life may be interesting; but on
“ account of its length, it would be
“ tiresome to hear it told. I have put
“ it upon paper; it was an amusement
“ to me during the winter in my re-
“ tirement; and if I had died, it might
“ have reached you. But I was un-
“ conscious of being in your neigh-
“ bourhood, nor did I know that you
“ had married lord Harrington. You
“ will find my reasons for concealment
“ in my narrative.—I am now happy.
“ Life is short; and I will not tarnish
“ my present joy by a painful recol-
“ lection of past sorrows.”

“ I am exceedingly happy, dear lady
“ Matilda, that you still preserve that
“ cheerfulness which you were ever so
“ loved

" loved for. I know that it is the fun-
 " shine of life; but when compared
 " with you, I was never fit for any
 " thing but the gloom of a convent."

" For what is natural, lady Harring-
 " ton, no praise is due. The world,
 " had it known my story a few days
 " since, would have said that I had
 " been born under an unfortunate
 " planet. At this moment I think that
 " none could have been more fortunate.
 " I hope I shall see my lord soon, for I
 " wish to know every part of your
 " family."

" A just rebuke, my friend: this is
 " my eldest daughter, Elizabeth; and
 " this my youngest, Matilda; this my
 " youngest son, who is captain of a
 " troop of horse; and my eldest will,
 " I hope, soon be here to pay his re-
 " spects

“pects to you.”—“Your daughters
“are fine young women, lady Harrington; your son, if I may be allowed
“to tell fortunes, will in due time be
“a general; and I trust that all of them
“will prove blessings to you.”—“My
“lord is coming up,” said Elizabeth.
“Do not tell him who I am,” said lady
Matilda; “I never saw him but twice,
“and yet I retain the idea of him.”
My lord entered, and the person from
the Cottage was presented to him.—
“You must think me very impertinent,
“madam,” said my lord, “for break-
“ing in upon your retirement; but
“the ridiculous notions of the country
“people concerning witchcraft obliged
“us to intrude.”—“What your lord-
“ship terms intrusion, I consider as the
“most fortunate event of my life,” re-
plied lady Matilda.

“ I have a letter, lady Harrington,”
said my lord ; “ but am unable to de-
“ cide whether it will give you pleasure
“ or pain. It comes from a friend in
“ London, and informs me of lord
“ Montacute’s death. Having no near
“ relations, he has devised all his pos-
“ sessions, which are very extensive, to
“ the friend of your heart, lady Ma-
“ tilda Devereux.”—“ That would be
“ charming news, my lord, could we
“ but find her.”—“ I would not wish
“ to flatter you,” said he, “ upon this
“ occasion ; but I think she must be in
“ a better world.”—“ Do you remem-
“ ber her ?” said Elizabeth. “ I have
“ only an idea,” he replied, “ of the
“ finest woman I ever saw. She was
“ taller than you, I think, Matilda ;
“ very finely shaped ; had dark ex-
“ pressive eyes, and a brunètte com-
“ plexion.

plexion. Now, ladies, as it is
“ some years since I saw her, I hope
“ you will allow that my memory has
“ not lost the impression she made.”—
“ You have painted her admirably,”
said lady Harrington.

The captain entered with his brother, who looked for some time very attentively at lady Matilda; then turning to his mother, “ I think, madam,
“ that lady is so like a miniature you
“ value, that I cannot help gazing at
“ her.”—“ I wish we could find the
“ original,” said lady Harrington.—
“ You have not answered your letter,
“ my lord, concerning lord Montacute?
“ and before you do, let me introduce
“ my dear long lost friend, lady Matilda
“ Devereux.” My lord started, and the young people smiled.
“ I shall now, madam,” said my lord,
E 6. “ answer

“ answer the letter immediately, as it
“ will have such happy intelligence to
“ convey; and permit me to congratu-
“ tulate you upon this good fortune.”—
“ Fortune, my lord,” returned lady
Matilda, “ is no acquisition compared
“ to the being restored to these valuable
“ friends; and I now think my good
“ fortune complete without the addi-
“ tion of lord Montacute’s.”

Mrs. Bridget had seen the black pal-
frey pacing slowly towards the abbey,
and hid herself in a corner near the
screen in the hall, where she took a
peep at the witch, and shuddered at her
ugliness; and when that part of her
curiosity was satisfied, she wished to
hear in what manner a witch would
talk; for that purpose she put her
ear as close as possible to the key-hole
of the library door; and when she
heard her ladies in distress involuntarily
came

came in ; but was in such dreadful confusion when the water was overthrown, as has been related, and at finding the witch had two skins, as she termed it, one over the other, that it confirmed her being, as she said, a witch indeed. She was then carried to her apartment and put to bed, where she soon recovered the use of her speech ; for seeing the upper housemaid, “ Am I alive indeed, Betty ? ” said she.—“ Yes,” said Betty, “ and alive-like. What has “ been the matter with you, for I never “ saw you in such a taking in my “ life ? ”—“ It was surprising,” said Bridget, “ that I was not flown away “ with ; for the witch pretended to “ faint, the ladies called for me, and I “ shook and was in such a twitter, that “ I sluiced a whole jug of water over “ her face. My lady gave me her nice “ cambrick handkerchief to wipe it off ; “ as

“ as ill luck would have it, that dropped
“ into the sloop; still my lady bade me
“ wipe her dry; and not knowing what
“ I was about, I began rubbing with
“ the handkerchief all wet as it was;
“ and so with rubbing, the skin came
“ off just like an eel’s, and under it
“ was red. This scared me; for;
“ thinks I to myself, the next skin the
“ Devil will have must be of his own
“ colour, which fright threw me into
“ fits.”—“ Are you sure a skin came off?
“ are you sure of it?” said Betty. “ As
“ sure as that you sit there; for it stuck
“ upon the handkerchief as thick as
“ could be.”—“ I am afraid,” said
Betty, “ you were listening, and listen-
“ ers never get any good.”—“ I did
“ listen; but I heard nothing extraor-
“ dinary, till one of them cried out
“ that she was fainting, and another
“ called me, and ran to the door; so I
“ was

“ was forced to go in, or old Scratch
“ should have had me before I would
“ have gone near them in such com-
“ pany. Well, nothing shall make me
“ stay in this house, for the witch will
“ be spiteful to me for rubbing off her
“ skin. I love the family dearly, to be
“ sure; but I love my life better.”—
“ Why you had better by half stay,”
said Betty; “ for only think, if you
“ were to go threescore miles off, it is
“ but a step for a witch upon a broom-
“ stick; and as you have friends here,
“ it is ten to one that she will not take
“ any notice of you for rubbing the skin
“ off her frightful visage.”

My lord informed his correspondent,
that lady Matilda Devereux was in his
house, ready when called upon to iden-
tify herself; and that lady Harrington
had

had the certificate of her mother's marriage.

Lady Matilda had no wardrobe, but was soon arrayed suitable to her rank and station in life.—Jenny Hawthorn was in raptures, lady Matilda having taken her third sister as her own maid, and one of her brothers as her own man. The old wardrobe, and the cats (with a purse for their maintenance) were given to Jenny; the Cottage was shut up, but the gardener at the abbey was to take care of the garden.—Justice Wood unsaid every thing he had said upon the subject, and did himself the justice to declare, that he knew lady Matilda must be something out of the common way; and it certainly was a much more wonderful thing to find the daughter of an earl in a Cottage, than a witch.

Lady

Lady Matilda received a summons to prove her title; my lord and lady offered to accompany her; the latter, however, she declined, as Miss Harrington was ill with the small-pox, which, though very favourable, wanted care.

“ No, my dear lady Harrington, I will
“ not take you from your daughter; if
“ you will permit my lord, his eldest
“ son, and Matilda, to accompany me,
“ I am then unreasonable enough; my
“ favourite the captain cannot leave his
“ regiment, but you will come up to us
“ when your daughter is perfectly re-
“ covered. I will leave a packet upon
“ my table, wherein you will find my
“ history. Early in the morning we
“ set out for London; do not disturb
“ yourself, therefore. Adieu, and I
“ hope we shall soon meet again.”

Next

Next morning lady Harrington found the papers mentioned ; and a note written the evening before began thus. “ My dear lady Harrington, when the “ inclosed was written, I had no idea “ of being so happy as ever to have seen “ you again. I wrote it in hopes that “ it might reach you when I was no “ more. The world has not, perhaps, “ been lenient to me ; but I hope the “ contents of this paquet will prove to “ you, that I have not done any thing “ to forfeit the good opinion with which “ you formerly honoured me.”

“ Will you permit me, madam,” said the captain, “ to read a portion of this “ narrative to you and my sifter every “ day ?”—“ I thank you, John,” said lady Harrington, “ in a day or two we “ will begin.”—“ You do not, my dear “ madam,

“ madam, seem so impatient as I ex-
“ pected you would have been upon this
“ occasion.”—“No,” said lady Harrington,
“ my mind at present is so occu-
“ pied by the delightful idea of having
“ found my friend, that I have no place
“ for any thing else. My head is not
“ used to events of this sort; I cannot
“ be all joy one moment, and all for-
“ row the next; for I believe my mind
“ is too slow to be either extremely
“ elated or depressed. This unexpected
“ meeting has so much raised my spi-
“ rits, that it will take some time to
“ bring me to my natural tone again.”—
In two days after this the captain began
to read

THE HISTORY OF MATILDA DEVEREUX.

“ When you left me, my dear Isa-
“ bella, to return to court, I was not
“ happy,

“ happy, and endeavoured to fix my
“ mind to come to you ; but your situ-
“ ation with the queen made me con-
“ clude, that the daughter of Effex,
“ her once-loved Effex, would be an
“ unwelcome sight to her ; and I was
“ too proud at that time to appear
“ in any character but my own. Lady
“ Coniers treated me, not ill indeed,
“ but with a kind of inattention that
“ was extremely disgusting ; and would
“ frequently say, “ Have I not taken
“ you into my house, am I not your
“ protector ? if it were not for me,
“ where could you go ? You cannot fly
“ to your dear Isabella ; for if the in-
“ exorable old queen were to know that
“ a drop of the blood of Effex re-
“ mained, would she not shed it ? Hap-
“ py are you under my roof. You seem
“ to scorn my son’s love ; but he is a
“ fool in that respect, and I have other
“ views

“ views for him. It would be the
“ death of me to see him your husband;
“ your five hundred pounds a-year can-
“ not be any object to him.”

“ I do not wish to marry your son,
“ lady Coniers; I would not wish to
“ offend you; permit me to be in your
“ house; let me remain in quiet; I do not
“ wish to mix with your company; only
“ let me have my horse, my little gar-
“ den, and my apartment to myself; I
“ require nothing more.” — “ Well, Ma-
“ tilda, well; and all I require of you
“ in return is, not to marry my son.”
“ I promised faithfully that I would not.
“ —As I was amusing myself one day in
“ my garden, her son came to me. “La-
“ dy Matilda,” said he, “ why will you
“ refuse me? I love you with the great-
“ est affection. With your fortune and
“ mine, we might live very comfort-
“ ably;

“ ably ; I am not extravagant, and you
“ seem to be quite otherwise.”—“ Your
“ fortune, sir,” I replied, “ is very
“ large ; mine sufficient for myself.”—
“ Who told you, lady Matilda, that
“ my fortune was large ?”—“ Your
“ mother.”—“ Ah, my mother,” he
replied, “ will ruin me every way.
“ What am I ? a very blockhead ; not
“ better than the fellow who rubs
“ my horses heels. It is true I can
“ read and write ; but I have only been
“ taught by the schoolmaster of the
“ parish ; I have not had the education
“ of a gentleman ; I know nothing. I
“ can indeed ride a hunting as well as a
“ groom ; I can fly a hawk, and am a
“ tolerable judge of a greyhound ; but
“ I feel my inferiority when I am with
“ other young men ; then I am misera-
“ ble ; I find myself their butt on
“ account of my ignorance ; it is not
“ my

“ my fault, however ; here I am two-
“ and-twenty, and know nothing. My
“ mother has not given me a chance of
“ being any thing but a blockhead.
“ You have had the education of a
“ gentlewoman, and are the sole object
“ of my affections. Oh, lady, if you
“ would but take me as I am, I would
“ put myself under your guidance, and
“ endeavour to be what the son of
“ fir William Coniers ought to be. I
“ feel such respect for my mother, that
“ I would not offend her in any other
“ way ; and I can assure you, notwith-
“ standing what she says, she would re-
“ joice to see you her daughter-in-law
“ to-morrow. My mother has not al-
“ ways accustomed herself to speak the
“ truth ; but you shall never hear any
“ thing else from my lips. As to my
“ fortune, I know not what it is. I
“ have enquired of the tenants here,
“ and

“ and they told me that they pay my
“ mother five hundred pounds a year.
“ I have an estate in the north of Eng-
“ land, and another in the north of
“ Ireland. When I mention these
“ things to my mother, she tells me
“ that I am a dolt, and not fit for any
“ thing but to break a setting dog or
“ find a hare.”—“ I told Mr. Coniers
“ that I never would marry; that my
“ mother’s unfortunate death, and her
“ affecting story, which I had so often
“ heard from lady Markham, had made
“ such an impression upon me, that the
“ idea of having a daughter left to the
“ wide world, as I had been, absolutely
“ determined me against it.”—“ Yet,
“ lady Matilda, I am your friend; if I
“ am not a companion for you now, I
“ may be. Believe me to have an ho-
“ nest heart, and allow me to be your
“ friend.”—“ You know my resolu-
“ tion,

“ tion, Mr. Coniers, with regard to
 “ myself ; and remember that lady Co-
 “ niers has higher views for you.”—
 “ Are not you an earl’s daughter ?
 “ What can she expect ? No, lady Ma-
 “ tilda ; that is only my mother’s talk.
 “ Would she have bred me up as she
 “ has done, if she had higher views for
 “ me ? No ; from my soul I believe that
 “ she would be happy were I to marry
 “ a village girl as ignorant as myself,
 “ that she might rule us both. I have
 “ only one friend in the world, and that
 “ is old lord Savage, whom my mother
 “ is making up to. He is not much
 “ better as to education than I am, but
 “ a great deal cunninger, I can see
 “ that. He persuades my mother to
 “ let me go to court and get knighted ;
 “ and then I am to go for Ireland to see
 “ my estates ; and he tells me that I
 “ may go safe enough, for it is at a
 VOL. II. F “ great

“ great distance from Tyrone. Oh,
“ lady Matilda, I think I will go to
“ court, and thence to Ireland; peti-
“ tion the lord deputy to give me a
“ commission, and with the rest of my
“ brave countrymen oppose the rebel
“ Tyrone. As a foldier, I shall be
“ something; as it is, I am nothing.—
“ Remember me, lady Matilda, as a
“ friend; if you will but recollect Co-
“ niers as a friend, my arm, while up-
“ lifted against the enemies of my
“ country, will be strengthened, when
“ I recollect the name of Matilda De-
“ vereux as my friend.”

“ I had no averfion, no objection to
“ Coniers; but I detefted his mother.
“ He was a fine-grown young man, with
“ an honeft heart, was good tempered,
“ and had common fenfe; but, as he al-
“ lowed, his education was not much
“ above

“ above that of his grooms. He went to
“ court; came back fir William; and
“ great preparations were made for his
“ going to Ireland.

“ Returning one evening from lady
“ Corbet’s, I met him; he seemed much
“ agitated, and said, “ I do not expect
“ ever to be any thing more to you
“ than a friend, but I must speak to
“ you in private; shall it be in the gar-
“ den, or your own apartment?”—
“ What you have to say, fir William,
“ may be said on horseback.”—“ No,
“ the servants will hear; make some
“ excuse, and alight.”—I pretended my
“ horse went lame, and alighted; he did
“ the same, saying, “ You shall not walk
“ by yourself.” He seemed musing
“ for some time, then, turning quick,
“ said, “ Lady Matilda, swear to me so-
“ lemnly, that you will never reveal
“ what

“ what I am going to tell you ; swear
 “ it.” I stood like a statue. “ You
 “ must do it,” said he, in a very de-
 “ termined tone of voice. “ Your se-
 “ crecy concerns yourself, and, unfortu-
 “ nately, me too.” I promised ; I swore.

“ He then took from his pocket some
 “ letters directed to his mother. “ Here,
 “ madam, here are proofs against a
 “ person whom I ought to love, whom
 “ I did love with the greatest affection ;
 “ but now my heart abhors her. Why
 “ was I taught reading ? had I been ig-
 “ norant of that, her vices, her cruel-
 “ ties would not have hurt me. I
 “ might have followed the hawk or the
 “ hound, married some one like my-
 “ self, and passed my life contentedly.”

“ The first letter was from lord Sa-
 “ vage, wherein he told her, that if she
 “ could

“ could but get rid of her booby son by
“ sending him to Ireland, he would mar-
“ ry her ; that he had put things in such
“ a train, that he should be landed in
“ a place where Tyrone would take him
“ for a spy, and that they never should
“ be troubled with the blockhead more.
“ The other was from lord Montacute,
“ urging her to take me off by poison,
“ for which he would give her a thou-
“ sand pounds. The letter hinted, that
“ there had been a negotiation upon the
“ business before ; and he was sure it
“ would be grateful to the queen ; he
“ then added, “ I detest the blood of Ef-
“ sex as much, nay, perhaps, more
“ than she does.”—At reading these
“ letters, I was astonished ; I did not
“ suppose that human nature could have
“ been so depraved.

“ Have you not some jewels, lady
“ Matilda ? ” — “ Many valuable ones,
“ fir William. ” — “ Fly, fly then, lady
“ Matilda, from that place ; [*pointing to*
“ *the house* ;] save my mother from doing
“ wrong ! ” — “ How, fir William, did
“ you get these papers ? ” — “ I was ex-
“ ercising last night a brace of young
“ spaniels in the park wood, and saw
“ a man who appeared to avoid me. I
“ walked as close to him as possible ;
“ and when I called to him to enquire
“ his business, he ran off. I pursued
“ him, and, his strength being spent,
“ he could not leap the park pales. I
“ held him roughly ; at last he confessed
“ that he had letters for lady Coniers,
“ which were given him by a person
“ whom he did not know, and that he
“ was to receive a reward when he
“ brought back the answers. I gave
“ him

" him money, and told him to de-
 " liver them the next night, as I would
 " return them to him in the same place
 " this evening. Lady Matilda, I am sick
 " of life; but I wish to preserve your's.
 " I go for Ireland to-morrow morning.
 " Let me entreat you once more to fly.
 " Not with me, wretch that I am in
 " having such a mother; yet, cruel as
 " she is, she is still my mother. Pack
 " up your money and jewels, lady Ma-
 " tilda, in the smallest compass possible;
 " I will come back to-morrow night at
 " twelve o'clock alone; I have the key
 " of the stable, and will saddle two
 " of your horses for you and Mary.
 " Meet me, on foot, at the great oak
 " on the outside of the park, by the
 " private gate; shut it hard, and
 " you shall hear me whistle. These
 " letters I will seal up, and return;
 " you now perceive, that my wishing
 " you

“ you to take an oath of secrecy was
 “ merely to save my mother.”

“ I promised to meet him ; and he
 “ went to seal and deliver the letters to
 “ the man in the wood. When I
 “ reached my apartment, I could not
 “ refrain from tears and bitter reflec-
 “ tions.—Unfortunate Matilda ! unfor-
 “ tunate from your birth ! Oh, that
 “ this aching head lay peaceful un-
 “ der the same cold marble with my
 “ mother !—Why should you fly with
 “ this man ? It will but prolong a mi-
 “ serable existence. Were it not bet-
 “ ter to end it yourself ?—I paused—
 “ Wretch that I am, to suffer such ideas
 “ to possess my mind ! I have no right
 “ to dispose of that which was bestowed
 “ by a superior power.—Your situation
 “ is terrible, surrounded by enemies
 “ who wish to take your life.—But do
 “ you

“ you know what others suffer? No,
“ you cannot conceive the many heart-
“ aches of this world ; therefore teach
“ yourself to believe, that there is not
“ a single individual who has not
“ his cares and anxieties ; and what
“ could you have done in this situation
“ without money ? You have that
“ which, with prudence, will maintain
“ you many years. Therefore fly with
“ your friend Coniers.”

“ Supper was announced ; I sent Mary
“ down with an excuse on account of
“ a head-ach. Several persons were at
“ table with lady Coniers ; and when
“ the message was delivered, she said,
“ William, I suppose the fair damsel is
“ bemoaning the loss of you ; why
“ don't you pack her up with some of
“ your trifles, and give her a sight of
“ Ireland.”—He made no answer.

“ When I informed Mary that I
“ should leave the house, she was sure
“ I was going beyond sea. I protested
“ that I had no such intention; and
“ even if she would not go with me, I
“ would make her a handsome present
“ to keep my departure secret for a few
“ days. I then laid some pieces of gold
“ upon the table. A terrible conflict
“ arose in the breast of Mary. She
“ must leave Suffex, her friends, and,
“ above all, her wardrobe. I promised
“ to reinstate the latter; and at last,
“ after abundance of tears and sobs,
“ she decided to follow my fortunes,
“ and serve me faithfully.

“ My jewels were packed in the
“ smallest possible compass, and, with
“ a little linen, were to be suspended at
“ the pommels of our saddles; the
“ money we put in our pockets; and
“ the

“ the clock striking twelve was the
 “ signal for our going. Mary having
 “ got the key of the private park-gate,
 “ we got out at the parlour window;
 “ and the night was such as Shake-
 “ speare beautifully describes in *The*
 “ *Merchant of Venice*.

“ We flap’d the gate as agreed,
 “ heard a loud whistle, and found Sir
 “ William with the horses under the
 “ great oak. We mounted with our
 “ bundles; and till that moment it
 “ had not entered my thoughts where
 “ to go, nor how to give an account of
 “ myself. This consideration made me
 “ fall into very disagreeable reflections,
 “ without knowing what to decide
 “ upon. At last I said, “ Sir William,
 “ which way are we going? where shall
 “ I lay my head? I am now an out-

“cast indeed!” This startled him.—
“Lady Matilda, we are now going from
“Suffex; and I think if we travel
“northward, you will have a better
“chance of avoiding danger. I know
“nothing of geography; but our horses
“are good, and I can answer for their
“travelling a hundred miles in two
“days. My horses and servants are
“gone to Chester, where they wait for
“me, as I am to sail from Holyhead.”
—“We may cross Middlesex,” I re-
“plied, “and get into the north road at
“St. Alban’s; but let us enquire our
“way as we go. I think in North-
“amptonshire or Leicestershire I might
“be safe. I am taking you out of
“your way for William to protect
“me.”—“Don’t mention it, lady Ma-
“tilda; let us pass for brother and
“sister, and we shall not be suspected.”
“We

“ We stopped at a little inn to re-
“ fresh our horses, and Mary had orders
“ to give an account of us by saying
“ that we were a Mr. and Miss Yel-
“ erton; that we lived near Canter-
“ bury, and were going into Northamp-
“ tonshire to see an old aunt who was
“ dying; that we expected a good
“ fortune at her death, and that our
“ sumpter horse was to follow with our
“ baggage.

“ Who is that gentleman and gent-
“ lewoman?” said the woman of the
“ house. Mary told her story. “ It is
“ a thousand pities they are not man
“ and wife; for I never set my eyes
“ upon a more comely gentleman; and
“ the gentlewoman is very well.”—
“ Aye,” said her husband; “ I think
“ she is the cleverest of the two; only
“ in my mind rather of the slightest
“ make;

“ make; but, mayhap, she is not more
 “ than sixteen or seventeen, for she is
 “ specially well grown, and will fill out
 “ in a few years; she will then be as
 “ handsome a creature as ever was
 “ born.” I was at that time twenty-
 “ two. “ You have so good a guess at
 “ ages,” said Mary, “ that I shall be
 “ afraid you should mention mine.”—
 “ Well,” said the host, “ look at me;
 “ why faith you are four-and-twenty, or
 “ thereabouts.”—“ You have just hit
 “ the mark,” said Mary.

“ We remounted our horses, and
 “ kept as much as possible to the great
 “ road, when I asked sir William what
 “ was his final determination.—“ I
 “ hope,” said I, “ you will not go the
 “ road pointed out by lord Savage;
 “ you recollect what those letters told
 “ you.”—“ Yes,” replied he; “ but it
 “ does

“ does not signify what becomes of me.
“ I may as well die by the hands of
“ Tyrone as not. He may kill me for
“ a spy, if he will, for I have no plea-
“ sure in life. I must leave you, lady
“ Matilda, who are the whole joy of my
“ life; and when I am from you what
“ is William Coniers, when he is
“ nothing to his mother, nothing to
“ himself, and nothing to lady Matilda
“ Devereux.”—“ You mistake, sir
“ William; you are a man of family
“ and fortune; and you ought to pay
“ proper respect to your situation in
“ life.”—“ I am nothing, lady Matil-
“ da, and you know it; you know
“ my misfortunes too well.”—“ Then
“ my friendship, sir William, which
“ you seemed to value, is of no con-
“ sequence, though I find yours of the
“ utmost importance to me. You are
“ now charitably guarding a runaway
“ from

“from destruction; and believe me
 “sincerely, if I should be the cause
 “of any disquiet to you, it would make
 “me miserable. But will you, as a
 “friend, take my advice?” He nodded
 “assent. “When we get another day’s
 “journey over, write to your servants,
 “direct them to proceed to Holyhead,
 “and thence to Dublin without you,
 “as you expect to meet them there.
 “When we part, return to London,
 “embark in the first ship for Ireland,
 “go to the lord deputy, and ask him
 “for a subaltern’s commission; join
 “your regiment, and fight for your
 “country and property. It will be of
 “infinite advantage to you; it will
 “give you consequence; you will as-
 “sociate with gentlemen; and, I trust,
 “you will forget many things which
 “you ought not to remember.”—“I
 “will take your advice, lady Matilda;
 “but

“ but there is one thing which I can
“ never forget, and that is your friend-
“ ship.”

“ We skirted London, and left St.
“ Alban’s on our right; still avoiding
“ the great road. On the second day
“ I found myself fatigued, and wished
“ to rest. We stopped at a little pub-
“ lic-house, and enquired for lodgings
“ in a farm-house. They told us, that
“ there was no such place proper for
“ us in the neighbourhood. We tra-
“ velled ten miles farther and again
“ enquired. The mistress of the house
“ did not know; but a plain-dressed
“ man coming in, she said, “ Pray
“ sir, do you know of any farm-house,
“ where a lady could board and lodge?
“ for the maid tells me she can pay
“ well; and more than that her bro-
“ ther, sweet young gentleman! is
“ going

“going to fight that wild Irish devil
“Tyrone, and wishes to leave the young
“gentlewoman in a safe place.”—“I
“can’t tell of any such place, dame,”
“he replied; “but you know that I
“have a strange old rambling house,
“where I could lodge a dozen or two.
“My great-grandfather thought we
“should have grown richer and richer
“every generation; and instead of that
“we grow poorer and poorer; not but
“I have enough. However, I have
“a monstrous house; this you may
“tell the maid; and tell her further,
“that my name is James Green, of
“Thrapston.—Is that the young gen-
“tleman coming out of the stable?”—
“Yes, sir,” said the hostess. He then
“went up to sir William, and said,
“Dame White tells me, sir, that you
“want a lodging for your sister. I am
“a countryman, and have a large house
“that

that I do not know what to do with ; if she would like half a dozen rooms, she is welcome. I have a wife and daughter at home, and a son at Oxford." Sir William, not well knowing what to say, replied, that he was much obliged to him ; and, showing him into the room, said, " This is my sister."—" And a fine lass she is ; I will take care of her, if my old-fashioned place will suit ; therefore, come and breakfast in the morning ; you will then see us all together ; consider of it, and enquire our characters."

" I told sir William, that I fancied this place would suit me, and thought I could be happy there ; for the master seemed to me to be without art, or, what was ten times worse, low cunning ;

“ning; but that we should see him
“and the rest of the family before I
“determined.

“Lady Matilda,” said sir William,
“if this should not exactly do, there
“is a lady who is an abbess at York,
“and who is, I think, a distant relation
“of my father’s. I saw her some years
“since, and she said, “My good boy,
“I am a relation of yours, but no great
“friend of your mother’s; for we
“think differently in every respect.
“Therefore, be not surprised that we
“have no great friendship for each
“other; but if ever you want a friend,
“apply to me. This lady’s name is
“Howard. Shall I write to her, and
“tell her about you?”—“I shall thank
“you,” I replied. “Then do you,
“lady Matilda, dictate the letter.”
“The

The answer was to be sent by the bearer, and directed to Mr. Green's, at Thrapston.

“ Sir William wrote to his servants to desire that they would proceed to Dublin with his horses and baggage; and the next day we went to Thrapston Hall, where we breakfasted and dined, and were so hospitably received, that I was sure I should be agreeably situated with them. In the evening we mounted our horses to return to the inn.

“ Sir William desired permission to write to me as a friend. As a friend I promised to answer him; but observed, that as he knew my resolutions, he must expect nothing farther. I wrote to my dear Isabella, with directions how to get it to her hands;

“ hands; but he found that the
“ queen was gone upon her progress
“ into Norfolk and Suffolk, and he
“ burnt it.

“ The next morning we parted; fir
“ William for London, to embark for
“ Ireland, and myself, with Mary, to
“ Mr. Green’s, at Thrapston, where we
“ were well received. They had pre-
“ pared a whole wing of the house for
“ me; the rooms were very large;
“ the furniture was magnificent but old-
“ fashioned, and the house had been
“ kept in repair; but I believe no im-
“ provements had been made since its
“ first erection. It had, however, a
“ gloomy magnificence about it which
“ pleased me extremely.

“ Mrs. Green was a remarkably well-
“ looking woman, and a woman of fa-
“ mily

“ mily too, being a sister of lord Vaux;
“ she was perfectly polite and good tem-
“ pered, fond of society, and cheer-
“ ful. Her daughter, a pretty girl of
“ eighteen, had seen nothing of the
“ world, but was lively and playful in
“ her conversation, extremely active,
“ an excellent housekeeper, and much
“ better pleased with making pickles
“ and preserves from morning till night,
“ than with exercising her needle, which
“ she detested. She would read to us,
“ however, as long as we pleased.—
“ Mr. Green was an active man of
“ fifty; did not trouble himself at all
“ with what passed in the world, but lived
“ with great hospitality; though not
“ as many of the country gentlemen
“ did, for he would say, “ I must have
“ time to myself for reflections upon
“ another world, because we are sure
“ we cannot live for ever in this, and
“ we

“ we do not know how near the time
“ may be for our leaving it.” He was
“ very strict in keeping his accounts,
“ particularly with his servants; his
“ daughter and himself took every
“ domestic care from Mrs. Green,
“ who was perfectly satisfied with that
“ arrangement, as the works of her
“ needle were her favourite amusements,
“ and she was extremely fond of being
“ read to when so employed. In the
“ absence of her daughter, therefore,
“ she allowed me to entertain her. Ro-
“ mances, all we could buy or borrow,
“ were read over and over, and listened
“ to with great delight, for those were
“ her favourite books.

“ Mr. Green, I believe, had not for
“ some years looked into any book, ex-
“ cept the bible or his accounts; and
“ would sometimes say, “ They made
“ me

“ me sick of those things at Eton ;
“ and when I went to college I found
“ no pleasure in them. When, there-
“ fore, I became my own master, I
“ threw them aside all together, for they
“ talked to and plagued me so much,
“ that I have hated the sight of a folio
“ ever since. I love conversation, how-
“ ever, and delight to hear merry sto-
“ ries ; but as for your tragedies and
“ love ditties, I detest them ; they make
“ me as melancholy as a cat ; some
“ winter’s ago, when we had a deep
“ snow, and I could not go out for se-
“ veral days, I took up lord Surry’s
“ poems, and read a great deal about
“ the fair Geraldine, I believe it was ;
“ but I thought I should never have
“ got the better of it.

“ Now the New Testament comforts
“ me ; if any thing goes wrong, three
VOL. II. G “ or

“ or four chapters make me forget my
“ care ; or if I am unwell, which don't
“ often happen, I can take up my own
“ book, be as ready to die as to live,
“ and my complaints soon go off.” He
“ was a great gardener, and had the
“ best fruit and vegetables in the coun-
“ try ; but flowers, he said, were like
“ plays and romances.

“ I petitioned to have a little flower-
“ garden, which Anna and myself were
“ to manage ; I was to teach her the
“ florist's art, and we had half an acre
“ set apart, which I walled and laid out ;
“ I then hired a man to attend my
“ horses, and to do the laborious work
“ in the garden.

“ The good lady of the house was
“ very fond of flowers, but would
“ never stir one step towards raising
“ them, nor ever expressed a wish in fa-

“ your

“ your of them, because she knew that
“ Mr. Green would never trouble him-
“ self about them. She had been very
“ handsome in her youth, and had a
“ particular aversion to sun-burns and
“ freckles ; and I never heard her give
“ an order to her housekeeper, except
“ to be extremely careful how she
“ distilled the rose and elder-flower wa-
“ ter.—She was remarkable for a fine
“ hand and arm, of which she was ex-
“ tremely careful ; and when I con-
“ sidered these things, I could not think
“ it wonderful that she had no predi-
“ lection for the cultivation of flowers,
“ though fond to an extreme of hav-
“ ing them in her drawing-room ; and
“ though she would sit for hours in
“ an arbour, covered with roses, honey-
“ suckles, and jasmine, enjoying the
“ sweets of our labour, while Anna
“ and myself were tying up or pruning

“ the flowers. When she went out,
 “ her horse was constantly led, for the
 “ exertion of guiding the animal would
 “ be a fatigue, or the bridle might
 “ harden her hands; and she con-
 “ stantly wore a mask upon these occa-
 “ sions. She was, however, a very
 “ pleasant companion, and I never saw
 “ her out of temper. She was not ex-
 “ travagant, and I do not think any
 “ thing could have disturbed the pla-
 “ cidity of her mind, except her work
 “ being spoiled when near being finish-
 “ ed, or the housekeeper’s forgetting
 “ the rose and elder-flower water.

“ In due time I received a letter from
 “ sir William Coniers, to inform me,
 “ that he had taken my advice; that the
 “ lord deputy had received him honour-
 “ ably, and given him a commission;
 “ that his servants and horses had been
 “ taken

taken by Tyrone, but released again, and had joined him; that he found, upon enquiry, that his estates had not been injured by the rebels; that he was preparing to set out with the troops; and that he found himself happier than he had ever been. Thus was I satisfied upon this young man's account. A letter from the abbess at York assured me, that whenever I wished to retire from the world, I should find an asylum with her.

“ I passed my time very pleasantly with the quiet family at Thrapston; but the master of the house broke out now and then into a kind of discontent. As no person ever opposed him, and he seemed naturally good-tempered and easily pleased, I could no way account for it, but from the waywardness of human nature.

“ One winter evening we were sitting round the fire and reading; Mr. Green had composed himself to sleep in his great armed chair; the book being finished, we conversed some time upon the subject, and when that was exhausted we were silent. Mr. Green awaked, and enquired if we had released the unhappy damsel about whom so many tears were shed; and being told that we had, answered, I am glad of it; for if I had not luckily gone to sleep, I must have cried too.”—“ But you have never heard *my* history, Miss Yelverton, nor how a fellow like me should have come to live in such a great rambling castle-like place as this; and as your book is out, I will tell you.

“ Our family were settled here long before the Conquest; and therefore,
“ except,

“ except, perhaps, a little dash of Ro-
“ man, Saxon, and Danish blood, I
“ have as much of the true old English
“ as any man in the kingdom. How
“ we got on till Richard the Second’s
“ days I cannot exactly say, but we had
“ our ups and downs as well as our
“ neighbours, and all of us have
“ been knighted, except myself. In
“ the days of Richard the Second, we
“ took the side of Henry of Boling-
“ broke (not for the sake of getting
“ any thing, but my ancestors knew
“ him personally). Henry, you know,
“ got the better, and we were in high
“ estimation in his and his son’s reign.
“ We had five good manors given us
“ for our services, and still kept on the
“ same side, sometimes up and then
“ down again, till Edward the Fourth
“ was king, and then some of our estates
“ were confiscated; but not so many as

“ to do us any great harm. The next
“ heir, which was my great-grand-
“ father, marrying an heiress, built this
“ place; and he was a friend of Rich-
“ mond’s at the battle of Bosworth,
“ where Humpback was slain. We lost
“ by this business, as we had been at
“ great expence in raising and main-
“ taining a regiment, and received no-
“ thing; for the king kept the confis-
“ cated estates to himself, wisely enough
“ I think, as by that means he gave his
“ friends no reason to complain, for he
“ treated them all alike. But my great-
“ grandfather always lived in high state
“ and estimation, and died at the be-
“ ginning of Henry the Eighth’s reign,
“ when my grandfather, a hare-brained
“ coxcomb, could think of nothing
“ better than going to France with
“ Henry to meet the French king. This
“ fellow spent two, nay three manors
“ upon

“ upon his own and his followers backs,
“ and returned not a whit wiser, but a
“ great deal poorer.—Then my father
“ married a handsome young woman,
“ who was my mother. She was a
“ very extravagant person, and had a
“ little good blood in her veins too,
“ though not a penny in her pocket;
“ but mind, I allege nothing against
“ her but her extravagance. She had
“ a manor left her by my father, poor
“ man! in her own disposal; and what
“ did she do, but spend every farthing of
“ it in junketting and fine clothes. So
“ you see there were four [*calling*
“ *over their names upon his fingers*];
“ good manors gone. If they had been
“ fought away inch by inch, or lost by
“ any misfortune, or divided by having
“ large families, it would not have
“ vexed me; but for four or five gene-
“ rations back we have had only one

“son till this present time, and I have
“two children. I have yet a good
“estate, it is true, which I do not live
“up to; and I reside in this great house
“because I was born here; I love it,
“and would not leave it on any ac-
“count; but the pride and pleasure
“of my life would be, to get my four
“manors back again; for which reason
“I am bagging up my money, in case
“any of them should come to be
“sold.”

“But you do not recollect, my dear
“Mr. Green,” said his wife, “that
“my fortune bought two of them
“back.”—“Odsso, so it did,” he re-
plied; “well, I did not think of that
“faith; then there remain two lost,
“and two of the best and most conve-
“nient, for they join the home estate;
“and if I could but get them back
“again,

“again, I should be the happiest fellow
“living.”

“Why will you, my dear sir, fret
“yourself,” I asked. “You acknow-
“ledge that you have more than you
“spend; and believe me, if you could
“to-morrow purchase the land you
“wish, yet such is the imperfection of
“human nature, that you would want
“more. I have heard that every per-
“son wants ten thousand marks.”—
“Well, and I believe ten thousand
“marks, with what I have, would pur-
“chase them.”—“But could you, if
“you had them, lay your hand upon
“your heart, and say, I am contented,
“I am happy?”—“To be sure I
“could, my good lass,” was his reply.

“But, my dear sir, let me cast up
“what you possess; first, you do not
G. 6. “want

“ want money ; you have your farm,
“ your garden, your horses, of which
“ you are extremely fond. Have you
“ not an amiable wife, son, and daugh-
“ ter?—If you have too much time,
“ why do you not hawk, fish, and follow
“ the setting dog? You like this place
“ better than any spot in the world ;
“ you have a large domain for your
“ field sports ; you are beloved by your
“ neighbours, and have excellent
“ health ; but you want opposition ; for
“ instance, if a litigious attorney were
“ to settle in the neighbourhood——”
“ — I would send him to the devil di-
“ rectly,” he replied ; “ if such a ve-
“ nomous creature were to come within
“ ten miles of us, myself and my
“ neighbours would be ruined inevi-
“ tably. As to me, I should be quite
“ crazy.”

“ Then,

“ Then, my dear fir, value your
“ happiness; for I really never heard
“ of any man being in possession of so
“ much as yourself.”

“ But is it not very provoking, my
“ dear lass, that we should lose so much
“ of our land in so foolish a manner? I
“ am sure that if there were such a thing
“ as a ghost, my great-grandfather
“ who built this place would have
“ hurled half the battlements of it at
“ his booby son’s head, for having
“ fooled away his money in finery for
“ France, shoeing his horses with
“ silver, and sticking feathers in his
“ noddle, for I am sure nature stuck no
“ brains there, the more the pity for
“ those who came after him! And
“ there was my mother too, my lady
“ mother; she must be for ever jaunting
“ about, and could not ride three miles
“ forsooth

“ forsooth without having four or five
 “ men in green after her with silver
 “ badges, and a young damsel or two
 “ to attend her, upon palfreys with
 “ handsome furniture and trappings.
 “ That was the way her money went ;
 “ and then she used to be so delighted
 “ when folks said, *There goes queen*
 “ *Green*, which was the nickname she
 “ was known by !”

“ You always mention your mother
 “ so disrespectfully !” said Mrs. Green.
 “ What does it matter how she spent
 “ her money ? it was her own.” — “ If
 “ I do mention her disrespectfully, my
 “ dear wife, it is only among friends ;
 “ for I would knock down any man
 “ who should dare to say a thing to her
 “ discredit. — But I have a right ; and
 “ let me tell you, it was a great mis-
 “ fortune that she had it in her power.
 “ to-

“to play the fool”—“Oh, we have
“enough, my dear Mr. Green, we have
“enough for ourselves and our chil-
“dren after us!”—“Fine talking that,
“my dear; and you, Miss Yelverton,
“desire me to hawk, to fish, and to
“set; but I do not like any of those
“amusements. Hunting, coursing,
“gardening, and farming, are all my
“joy.”

“We went on happily, and Anna
“and myself having seen a grotto at a
“gentleman’s house were anxious to
“have one. We talked of nothing
“else the remainder of the winter;
“and Mr. Henry Green, having come
“home for the vacation, encouraged
“us, by relating wonders of a grotto
“which he had seen in Oxfordshire.
“He was a very delicate young man,
“and resembled his mother. Mr.
“Green:

“ Green was fond of him, and looked
“ up to him to carry the name and
“ fame of the Greens to succeeding ge-
“ nerations. Yet he loved his daughter
“ better, for she was much more lively,
“ and would have made a much better
“ squire than her brother. He was
“ timid and indolent; the heat, the
“ cold, the wind, and the sun, were
“ continually putting him out of his
“ way. He could give an opinion of
“ his mother’s work, and it was always
“ judicious. When I played upon the
“ lute he would accompany me; he
“ was of great use too in arranging the
“ flower pots, and had procured from
“ a lady of his acquaintance some ex-
“ cellent receipts for beautifying the
“ skin. He would procure us books,
“ read to us, and was as fond of an
“ adventurous love-story as his mother.
“ In short, as he never interrupted us
“ in:

“ in our amusements, but often assisted
“ us, we liked him much. A hunting-
“ match, however, a long walk, or a
“ morning’s gardening, were pleasures
“ of too robust a nature for his con-
“ stitution. His hand was white, and
“ his form slim and delicate; he paid
“ great attention to his external appear-
“ ance, and was extremely fond of the
“ idea of a grotto; he drew plans, and
“ from his friends procured shells, spar,
“ &c. &c. As winter was the season
“ for collecting mosses, he allowed us
“ to go about that business by our-
“ selves; but was of wonderful use in
“ assisting us to dry and arrange them
“ in a room given up for that pur-
“ pose.

“ The next consideration was, a place
“ proper to build or rather to sink this
“ grotto in. Our flower-garden was
“ too

“ too small, and we had not even a
“ wish to disturb Mr. Green’s cabbages
“ and gooseberries. One day, when we
“ were conversing about it, Mr. Green
“ said, “ There is a place in the park
“ where my great-grandfather built a
“ banqueting house ; my father pulled
“ it down, thinking, I suppose, as I do,
“ that it was a mark of his folly ; and
“ so it was, sure enough. I remember
“ hearing some of the old servants,
“ who have been long dead and gone,
“ say, that there were arches under it,
“ to sit in when the weather was hot.
“ You may have that, and do what you
“ like with it ; and the four or five old
“ oaks will make it melancholy enough.
“ But did I tell you of a report, that
“ one of my manors is upon sale ?
“ Could I but get the money, what a
“ clever thing it would be ! ”

“ I have

“ I have not settled with you yet, my
“ dear fir ; myself, my man, my maid,
“ and my horses, have been living with
“ you for years ; and not one farthing
“ have I paid.”

“ Why, you are a great eater, my
“ las, and a great drinker ; and as
“ this house is so extremely small, you
“ must be very much in our way. But
“ let me ask you one question : Do you
“ not read and work with my wife ?
“ Do you not play musick, garden, and
“ teach Anna many things ? Do you
“ not like to see my farm, my cattle,
“ and above all my horses ; and don't
“ you talk a great deal to me about
“ these things, and very much to the
“ purpose ? And is not this enough for
“ the board of yourself and your maid,
“ and the keep of your horses ?”

“ But,

“ But, Mr Green, if you would let
“ me pay, it would assist in purchasing
“ what you wish.” — “ No,” he re-
“ plied, “ I will never buy land in that
“ way. Yet should the manor be really
“ to be sold, and I should want money,
“ if you would lend me a little I should
“ be much obliged to you.”

“ I had written many letters to my
“ dear Isabella, but received no answer.
“ I drooped when I thought you neglect-
“ ed my friendship; and fancy fre-
“ quently told me, that my supposed
“ elopement with sir William Coniers
“ was the cause of your silence. These
“ reflections frequently made me mis-
“ rable.”

“ I had a sum of money by me, and
“ all my valuable jewels; and, in the
“ situation I was now in, spent little;
“ but

“ but before we began the grotto I
“ bargained that I should defray all the
“ expences, and do it in my own way.
“ Mr. Green stood stoutly against it,
“ and wanted Anna to be at half the
“ expence. On those conditions I
“ would have nothing to do with it ;
“ and at last I got the better. We
“ procured labourers to clear the bushes
“ with which it was overgrown, to re-
“ move the rubbish, and open a little
“ rivulet, choaked by fedge and rushes ;
“ and as the water trickled down a de-
“ clivity we were in hopes of forming
“ something like a cascade. After a
“ fortnight’s labour we discovered a
“ Gothic arch very much ornamented,
“ which we beheld with wonderful
“ pleasure, as it was the finest entrance
“ imaginable for our grotto. We ran
“ to Mr. Green, and begged that he
“ would pay us a visit. We shewed
“ him

“ him the arch. “ Aye,” said he,
 “ more proofs of my great grand-
 “ father’s folly and extravagance ; fo
 “ the money went ; fo it went ; and if I
 “ had not given it to you, my lasses, I
 “ would lay a train of gunpowder and
 “ blow it up to-morrow ; nothing
 “ should remain of my great grand-
 “ father’s folly, but that great pile of
 “ stone the house ; and that I love only
 “ because I was born there, and had so
 “ much pleasure in running in the gal-
 “ leries when I was young, and find-
 “ ing birds nests in the park. I re-
 “ member that in the place where we
 “ now stand was a pretty run of water
 “ at that time, where I used to catch
 “ gudgeons ; and many a time have I
 “ drank out of my cap here in a hot
 “ day ; but that is all past and gone,
 “ and yet I remember it just as well as if
 “ it were but yesterday ; and many and
 “ many

“ many a time have I slipped the grey-
“ hounds in the park at the hares when
“ out of season, and hid those they killed;
“ but boys will be boys. And when I
“ was in love, I used to sit under these
“ trees and sigh, I hardly knew why
“ or wherefore, and was as whimsical
“ as an ape. I can’t think to this day
“ [*turning to Anna*], what your mother
“ married me for; she was a lord’s
“ daughter, had a good fortune, was
“ wonderfully handsome; and I was
“ always an out-of-the-way fellow.”—
“ But you were a handsome fellow,”
“ said Anna, “ had a good fortune and a
“ good temper; and, I suppose, as she
“ was turned of thirty, she thought
“ she might as well have you as any
“ other.”

“ Now you have hit it, my lass, you
“ have hit it; but if she had been
“ turned

“turned of forty, and as good humoured as she was, I should have loved her just as well.”

“We told Mrs. Green of our success in finding the Gothic arch, which I declared was the finest specimen of that kind of architecture that I had ever seen.”—“My dear,” said Mr. Green, “if I had not given that spot to those lasses for their pleasure, I would have demolished it in five minutes.”—“That would surely have been a great pity, Mr. Green; besides, you know Henry has taken a great deal of pains in drawing plans and collecting materials.”—“Well, well,” he replied, “none of you find fault with my pleasures, and therefore I should do wrong to speak against your’s, when you do me no harm. I only wish that beautiful

I

“specimen

ecimen, as you call it, of my great-grandfather's folly, had been at the bottom of the Red Sea before I had been born."

We resumed our work at the grotto; and when we had got about ten feet under the arch we discovered a door with a very antique keyhole: We conjectured that this might be a place where they kept their wine.—"There is a large bunch of strange old-fashioned keys," said Anna, hanging in the lumber-room, and I will fetch them." We tried them all, but they would not do; we attempted to force the lock, but that was impossible; for it was strongly barred by cross bars. I wished Mr. Green to see it. "No," said Anna, "let this be an adventure of our own." When our curiosity is satisfied, then

OL. II. H "shew

“ shew it him. We ordered the work-
“ men to bring their pick-axes; they
“ began to lift and batter with all their
“ might, and after three hours hard
“ work they made a breach, and in
“ another half hour we could get in.
“ We looked, but every thing was
“ dark; we sent a workman for can-
“ dles and a lanthorn, gave them mo-
“ ney, and sent them home. We each
“ lighted a candle, and put one in the
“ lanthorn; Anna went in first, and
“ started back. “ What is the matter?
“ what do you see?”—“ I thought,”
“ replied she, “ I saw a man in a very
“ old dress.”—“ How can you be so
“ ridiculous!”—“ Why, my dear Ma-
“ tilda, I am no more subject to fear
“ than you; but I think I saw a man in
“ an antique dress.”—“ Let me go in;
“ I fear nothing.” I passed her, saw
“ the figure of a man in the robes of
“ the

“ the garter, and stopped. Anna then
“ went forward, holding up the candle,
“ and said, “ It is a figure in marble,
“ with the arms folded, and sitting upon
“ a pedestal.” I took courage and found
“ it was so ; a very fine ring was upon
“ the right thumb, and the order of
“ the garter about the neck. Upon
“ the base of the pedestal was the fol-
“ lowing inscription :

“ This is the effigies of sir Edward
“ Green, knight of the garter, and
“ privy councillor to king Henry the
“ Seventh. I had lived long, being in
“ my seventy-seventh year, when I de-
“ posited this statue here ; and have
“ been as happy as mankind are per-
“ mitted to be in this life ; for the
“ only disquiet I have felt proceeds
“ from the extravagance of my son. If
“ any of my posterity should find this
“ marble,

“marble, it would be gratifying to my
 “spirit, if it were possible for me to
 “know that he conveyed it into the
 “great hall; but if Thrapston be in
 “other hands, I request, courteous
 “stranger, that you will suffer it to
 “remain here.

“EDWARD GREEN, K. G.”

“We walked to the house comment-
 “ing upon this discovery, and inform-
 “ed Mr. Green. “Why now, my
 “lasses, is not this all of a piece with
 “the life of this great-grandfather of
 “mine, this knight of the garter, of
 “whose folly I shall never see an end?
 “More stone coming to this great-heap.
 “Now I warrant that this marble busi-
 “ness cost a hundred marks, or more;
 “aye, a great deal more; I will put
 “him into the church.” — “That
 “would be improper, I think, my dear,”

“said Mrs. Green; for you know there
“is already in the church a very mag-
“nificent monument to his memory.”
“—“Certainly,” added his daugh-
“ter; “therefore do, my dear sir, let
“the knight be brought here. Could he
“know it, it certainly would give him
“pleasure.”—“What nonsense is that
“now!” said Mr. Green; “did he not
“do every thing against me when he
“was alive, though he did not know
“that such a person was to be born?
“Yet it was likely that he might have
“a great-grandson, and therefore he
“should not have thrown away his
“money so foolishly. No, no; he
“shall stay where he is; I will have
“him blocked up to-morrow; there let
“him be till another century; and if
“my great-grandson should chuse to
“lug him out, well and good.”

“ Indeed, my dear, you are wrong,”
“ said Mrs. Green; “ for I think it
“ would give great pleasure to Henry
“ to see him in the hall. You know
“ how fond he is of statues; and let
“ me tell you, it is no small honour
“ to have had a great-grandfather who
“ was a knight of the garter; and it
“ certainly might have an influence
“ upon our son, to prevent his ever
“ doing any thing that might disgrace
“ his ancestry.”—“ Well,” he said,
“ well, I can trace my pedigree beyond
“ the Conquest; and yet I think at some
“ time or other we must have kept
“ sheep, or why am I so fond of farm-
“ ing?”—“ Why,” I replied, “ our
“ grandfather Adam did something
“ like it, and you might inherit those
“ inclinations from him; but if I had
“ the honour of being a relation to this
“ knight of the garter, I should cer-
“ tainly

“certainly introduce him into the hall
“to-morrow.”

“Well,” said Mr. Green, “I see
“you are all against me; therefore
“bring him here to-morrow; but I
“would rather you had found the
“title-deeds of a good manor that this
“fellow squandered.”

“The next morning the carpenters
“made a frame, which they boarded
“over, and added four low wheels, to
“convey the knight. The base had,
“from length of time, sunk consider-
“ably into the earth; it was therefore
“with great labour placed upon the
“carriage, and conveyed safe to the
“hall-door, when Mr. Green made his
“appearance. “Have you brought
“him, my lads?” said he to the work-
“men. “Yes, your honour, safe
“enough;

“enough; but his worship is as heavy
“as lead; and it will take all our
“strengths to get him in.”—“Well,
“come,” said Mr. Green, “lift away,
“and set him down here.” They set
“it down. “It does not look well;
“take it up, and put it down [*stamping*
“*his foot*] just here.” The statue was
“again lifted up, when on a sudden
“the bottom of the base gave way, and
“such a quantity of gold coin fell out
“as astonished me. Mr. Green stood
“in silent admiration, and did not
“move a finger. “Now, sir, [*taking*
“*hold of his arm,*] you see why this
“noble knight of the garter wished to
“come here.”—“Aye,” he replied
“with a sigh, and the tears starting
“from his eyes; “aye, my las, I have
“all my life been a very ungrateful
“fellow.”

“Bags

“Bags were brought, and the treasure safely conveyed away. “What can I do for you and Anna, if you won’t let me pay you?” said Mr. Green.—“Only, my dear sir, let me remain in your house with your daughter and good Mrs. Green; for here I am happy.”—“You shall have some pocket-pieces, however,” said he, and threw four or five handfulls of the money to Anna and me.

“Mrs. Green was not at all elated by this discovery; neither do I think that she would have been much depressed at losing the same sum. She went on with her chairs, cushions, and screens, as usual. Had she, indeed, met with any serious misfortune, to have forced her into active life, it might have depressed her; but passing her time in a busy kind of
 H 5 “indolence,

" indolence, entirely without care, be-
 " ing amused by entertaining books,
 " and having good health, an easy tem-
 " per, and no ambition, she was the
 " happiest human being that I ever
 " knew.

" When Mr. Green's joy had a little
 " subsided, and his villagers had de-
 " voured the beef and drank the ale
 " that he gave them upon this occasion,
 " he would pay the expences of the
 " grotto; he gave us also two acres at-
 " tached to it, which we beautified,
 " and had a very tolerable cascade.
 " The manors were purchased, and an-
 " other added to the original estate.
 " One evening awaking from his nap,
 " What a wonderful thing it is," said
 " he, " that I, who have been abusing
 " this great-grandfather of mine for so
 " many years, should find him at last
 " the

“ the greatest friend I ever had in the
“ world ! Providence certainly put into
“ your heads the desire of having a
“ grotto ; but how I came to fix upon
“ that place I know no more than the
“ man in the moon. I think myself
“ very rich now ; yet I will live as I
“ like, and not be put out of my way ;
“ that would kill me ; but I will give
“ more in charity, a great deal more
“ than I used to do, and I will, exalt
“ the good old knight of the garter,
“ for I will fix him on the top of my
“ grand staircase, close to the door of
“ the gallery where his picture with
“ others of my ancestors hang ; and
“ upon the base I will have a Latin in-
“ scription, setting forth my gratitude
“ to him. Henry can contrive a Latin
“ inscription. But I was most certainly
“ mad for having that boy named Henry
“ instead of Edward, when we have
“ had

“ had so many Edwards in our family ?”
 “ there was one as far back as the Con-
 “ fessor’s time. What a blockhead
 “ have I been ! and I would now give
 “ a thousand marks that his name had
 “ been Edward.” — “ Don’t torment
 “ yourself, my dear,” said Mrs. Green ;
 “ Henry is a very good name.” —
 “ Why, my dear wife, it is no torment
 “ at all to me, but a very great plea-
 “ sure, to abuse myself when I think I
 “ am wrong ; which, as it has turned
 “ out, I certainly was when our son
 “ was named.”

“ I am surprized, Mr. Green,” F
 “ said to him one evening, “ that you
 “ never enquired concerning *my* fa-
 “ mily.” — “ Why, I had other matters
 “ to mind,” he replied ; “ I never in
 “ my life troubled myself with other
 “ folks, not I.” — “ I have often wished
 “ to

“to know,” said Mrs. Green, “but
“forbore enquiry from motives of de-
“licacy.”

“I began my narrative, and the mo-
“ment it was finished, he said, “I
“never was at court in all my life; but
“now, old as I am, I will go with
“you, throw myself at the queen’s
“feet, and petition her to make you
“countess of Effex.”—“My dear sir,
“do not think of such a thing! Be-
“side, you forget that the queen has
“been dead some years.”—“True,”
“he replied, “very true; I did not
“think of that, though I recollect it
“now you mention it. But do, my
“dear lass, do marry sir William Co-
“niers! It would give me great plea-
“sure if you would but have pity upon
“him; and he is as fine a looking fel-
“low as ever I saw in my life.” I
“told

“ William Coniers stood before us;
 “ the same face, the same figure, but
 “ in his address much improved. Mr.
 “ Green was almost out of his senses
 “ with joy. “ This is the man, this
 “ is he, my lasses, whom you will be
 “ so glad to see. Here, he has beaten
 “ the wild Irish; and is now a captain,
 “ I can tell you that.” Then giving
 “ a significant nod, “ he is come to
 “ ask you a question, Matilda. Is not
 “ that true, fir William?”—“ I am
 “ come, fir,” he answered; “ to pay
 “ my respects to you and these ladies,
 “ which I should have done much
 “ sooner had my duty permitted.”—
 “ I have told him,” said Mr. Green,
 “ that I knew he was not your brother;
 “ he was somewhat shy the last time I
 “ saw him; but I cannot wonder at it;
 “ for though a man may be doing right,
 “ yet if he be doing things secretly, he
 “ can’t

“ can’t be perfectly easy I think; but
“ I never tried, having never had any
“ occasion for a secret in all my life;
“ and I hope I never shall; but now
“ he is come fair and above board, as
“ ~~for~~ William Coniers, we will be joy-
“ ful; the great bald-faced buck,
“ which I have kept for some great
“ occasion, shall die; to-morrow he
“ dies.”

“ The bald-faced buck was killed,
“ and the house filled for a fortnight
“ with musick, dancing, and every kind
“ of amusement. At times, I had a
“ little conversation with sir William,
“ who informed me, that he had not
“ seen his mother; that the affair be-
“ tween her and lord Savage was gone
“ off; that he found, on inspecting his
“ property in Ireland, and corresponding
“ with his agents in England, that his
“ estates

"difficulties were much larger than he had
 "any idea of; that he did not wish to
 "prevent his mother having whatever
 "money she had occasion for, beside
 "her jointure; "for she is my mo-
 "ther," he added sighing, "and my
 "heart will ever acknowledge her as
 "such." He then hoped that my sen-
 "timents were changed in regard to him;
 "I assured him they were not; that
 "I had a fixed determination never
 "to marry; that marriage had been

"every objection to my father; that
 "he lost the protection of his family
 "by marriage; that my mother was
 "equally unhappy in that state; and I
 "was therefore determined to try whe-
 "ther a life of celibacy would prove
 "more fortunate to me; that I was
 "resolved to find whether humility
 "would insure security, or content-
 "happiness; that I should ever con-
 "sider

“sider him as one of my best friends ;
 “and if my sincerest regard was of any
 “value to him, I begged he would
 “never mention the subject more ; that
 “he once did me the honour to con-
 “sider me as his sister, and if he would
 “still allow me to have such a claim
 “upon his affections, I should be
 “happy ; that the house was full of
 “agreeable young women, and I wished
 “he would think seriously of one of
 “them. He called me cruel, and so
 “forth ; but all to no purpose ; I was
 “not to be moved.

“I was glad when the house began
 “to clear from the croud of visitors,
 “that we might again enjoy ourselves
 “as usual. We resumed our work,
 “walks, rides, books, and garden, and
 “were again happy.

“ One

“ One evening, after supper, Mr.
 “ Green said, “ Sir William, now that
 “ these cruel wars are over, I hope you
 “ will settle, live in the country, marry
 “ and do good, and be a justice of
 “ peace.”—“ Are you in the commis-
 “ sion, sir ?” he asked. “ Why, no;
 “ I am not ; I never had a turn for such
 “ things ; but I think it right for all
 “ that. I am a kind of idle fellow, yet
 “ always busy ; and as I find I have
 “ hardly time to get through my own
 “ business, I should not like to be
 “ plagued with that of the county.
 “ Beside, I could not go to a dull
 “ quarter-sessions upon a fine hunting
 “ morning ; to sit upon the bench when
 “ the scent lay breast-high, would not
 “ do for me ; I should lose my health ;
 “ and my farm, my garden, and above
 “ all my stud, would be quite neglected ;
 “ and every thing about me run to
 “ ruin.

“ruin. No, I should lose the pleasure
“of these things, and get in return
“what would be very disagreeable; but
“you are young, and if you begin in
“a different way from what I did, things
“will go smooth enough with you; for
“what I do, is from being used to it;
“and every thing, when we come to
“think about it, is habit; it is all habit,
“my dear sir, I am sure of it; and
“people may just as well get into good
“as bad, or bad as good ones; for
“it is nothing more than making a
“law with themselves at setting-off.

“Now when I was a young man, I
“remember, I somehow or other caught
“myself, that is, I was rather inclined
“to take too much of the bottle and
“tankard; and so I considered seriously
“of the matter, and at last made a vow
“to drink only so much a day for one
“year.

“ year. I think I was at that time just
“ three-and-twenty. Well, I stuck to
“ it, and have never since taken a drop
“ more. They joked me a little at
“ first ; but when they found me ob-
“ stinate (for I was born obstinate), they
“ let me do as I would, and I have
“ never had any more trouble about it.

“ You are perfectly right, fir,” said fir
“ William ; “ there is nothing so com-
“ mendable as being firm in our reso-
“ lutions ; for nothing can be well done
“ without it.”—“ You do not seem to
“ understand me, my dear fir ; mine is
“ not resolution ; I never was resolute ;
“ but it is all natural obstinacy, for
“ there is no turning me if I once set
“ on ;—but I always endeavour to con-
“ sider, and turn the thing in my mind
“ twenty times, aye, and twenty to that,
“ before I do it, or let it alone.”—
“ That

“That is extremely proper,” re-
“turned fir William; “and I hope I shall
“profit by your example.”—“Thank
“you, fir: our high-flying folks are very
“apt to laugh at James Green; but I
“have made up my mind, and therefore
“do not regard them.”

“Another month elapsed, and I saw
“with pleasure that fir William shewed
“a great partiality for Anna. At
“length he discovered the state of his
“heart to Mrs. Green, who referred
“him to her daughter; the daughter
“did not start any insuperable objec-
“tions, and it was then thought right
“to acquaint Mr. Green; but as he
“treated all sorts of subjects differently
“from other people, and was, as him-
“self acknowledged, intolerably obsti-
“nate, fir William did not well know
“how to begin. At last he made me
“his

“ his confidant, and I undertook to
 “ give Mr. Green a hint of the mat-
 “ ter; for he thought of his own af-
 “ fairs so much, that they might have
 “ made love a dozen years, and he
 “ would never have observed it.

“ Riding with him the next day about
 “ his farm, I took occasion to say a
 “ great many handsome things of fir
 “ William Coniers, in which he agreed,
 “ and expressed his surprize that I
 “ would not marry him.—I assured him
 “ I was as obstinate as himself, and had
 “ taken a resolution never to marry;
 “ but that I knew fir William was in
 “ love, nay, that he would marry soon,
 “ if the father of the lady would give
 “ his consent; and then desired he
 “ would guess at the person.—He men-
 “ tioned a dozen names, but all were
 “ wrong; at length I told him.—“ Oh,
 “ :

“ it can't be true, my dear las; such a
“ fine young man, with such a noble
“ fortune!” I assured him it was so,
“ and that sir William had made me
“ his ambaffador upon the occasion.—
“ He ftopped his horse, took off his
“ hat, wiped his face, and looked ex-
“ tremely grave; then clapped on his
“ hat, returned his handkerchief into
“ his pocket, and rubbed his eyes.—
“ Are you joking, or am I in a dream?”
“ I assured him that I was ferious, and
“ that he was perfectly awake.—“ Then
“ what fays Anna?”—I could not tell;
“ for I was to get his permission for fir
“ William to ask her.—Aye, as soon as
“ he will; but I think it is going some-
“ how a roundabout way to court the
“ old man firft. I fould not like that,
“ if I were a young woman. Why,
“ before I faid a fingle word to lord
“ Vaux, his daughter and I had fettled
VOL. II. I “ it;

“ it ; and if the old nobleman had re-
 “ fufed me, I fhould have ftolen her
 “ out of the window. But when will he
 “ ask her ? I hope the girl will not be
 “ fuch a fool as to refufe him ; I hope
 “ not, for I fhould not like to fay, You
 “ *muft*, *you fhall* have him ; becaufe the
 “ bufinefs is to laft for life, fo it would
 “ not be right. Perhaps as you have
 “ refufed him, fhe will ; but if fo, I
 “ fhould be forry, very forry indeed.”
 “ —“ Then may I tell fir William you
 “ approve of it ?” —“ By all means, my
 “ dear, by all means.”

“ We entered the houfe juft as din-
 “ ner was ferving, and went almoft
 “ immediately into the eating-room.
 “ Two or three neighbouring gentle-
 “ men fat down with us ; but Mr.
 “ Green, contrary to his ufual custom
 “ of minding his own bufinefs, and
 “ eating

“ eating the beef of his own breeding,
“ was watching Anna and sir William
“ Coniers. Finding that he looked at
“ her, and that she kept her eyes
“ averted, he did not seem to like it.
“ At last, “ Why, Anna, look at sir
“ William ; don’t you think that dress
“ of his very pretty ?”—Yes, she had
“ admired it before.—“ Well now, to
“ please me, look at it again. “ What,
“ are you afraid to look a young man
“ in the face ? I am sure you will find
“ nothing in his countenance to fright
“ you.” I was vexed. When Mrs.
“ Green said to her husband, “ Shall I
“ give you some chicken ?”—“ Yes—
“ no ; give some to Anna and sir Wil-
“ liam.”—“ I want to help you, my
“ dear,” said Mrs. Green ; “ sir Wil-
“ liam and Anna will take care of
“ themselves.”—“ I wish they may with
“ all my heart,” [*rubbing his hands*] ;
“ I hope

“this venison is as good as that of your
“bald-faced buck, but not so fat.”—
“Nothing like it, my dear,” returned Mr.
“Green; “but if I had known as much
“then as I do now——.”—“I under-
“stand you, sir, “said the gentleman;
“you would have kept it for a better
“purpose.” Mr. Green laughed violent-
“ly; said, he was the cleverest fellow
“in the whole county at taking a hint;
“and shook hands with him across two
“others. Happy was it for Anna
“when we escaped from table, for we
“had never seen Mr. Green in such a
“humour before.

“The next day sir William made his
“offer in due form, and was accepted
“by the lady, to the great joy of her
“father. Sir William then left us to
“go into Suffex, and was to return to
“Thrapston in a month. A fortnight
“brought

“ brought letters from him to Mr.
“ Green, Anna, and myself. The
“ first respected settlements; the se-
“ cond, I conclude, was a love-letter;
“ and mine, an effusion of friendship.
“ It told me that he had conversed with
“ his mother concerning her conduct
“ towards me; that nothing but her
“ being his mother should make him
“ wish her crimes might be hid as much
“ as possible from the world; that he
“ found her health very indifferent, and
“ that she was confined to her apart-
“ ment; that she seemed to grow pro-
“ gressively worse, had opened her
“ whole heart to him, and told him
“ that lord Montacute was still seeking
“ my life; that he knew where I was
“ concealed, and the name I went by,
“ and was determined to take me un-
“ awares, and confine me in a convent
“ in France for life. The letter, there-
“ fore,

“fore, advised me by all means to seek
“an asylum with his relation the abbess
“at York.”

“I determined to go to York, but
“first to consult my friends. We held
“a council, and it was agreed that I
“should set out in the night; but how
“to get there without a guide! Luckily,
“one of Mrs. Green’s servingmen had
“a mother there, who kept a little
“shop; and he wanted to settle with
“her, but had not money sufficient.
“This man I spoke to, and asked him
“what it would take to set him up well
“in business. He said, fifty marks. I
“told him that I would purchase his
“secrecy at a hundred.—He replied by
“saying, that it was too much money
“for an honest secret; and if it were
“not an honest one, he would not
“keep it for a thousand. I told him,

" he should engage in nothing that was
 " wrong; but the truth was, I had
 " enemies who sought my life, and I
 " wanted to fly from them to the con-
 " vent at York; that he must be secret
 " in the family, and say that I was going
 " a journey to see some friends in Lon-
 " don.—My faithful Mary, who had
 " stayed with me during all the happy
 " years I remained under Mr. Green's
 " hospitable roof, agreed to trust her
 " fortune with mine; and I was pre-
 " paring to leave those amiable friends
 " with tears and regret.

" We dressed ourselves like the lower
 " order of country people; and on
 " the third of October, at twelve at
 " night, left Thrapston, and travelled
 " as far as we could till day-break;
 " then stopped at a little inn, where
 " our guide had orders to say that we
 " were

“ were his cousins, and were going to
“ York to see our mother.

“ The reflections which possessed my
“ mind at this time were very bitter:
“ I was leaving those for whom I had
“ the greatest affection; I was going to
“ a convent, which I persuaded myself
“ was inhabited by the daughters of dis-
“ content; I was sufficiently miserable
“ myself, and therefore cheerful society
“ would have been more agreeable to
“ me. Though the season of the year
“ was extremely beautiful, from the
“ variegated foliage, yet the leaves every
“ moment falling to the ground with
“ the least breath of air, inspired me-
“ lancholy ideas. The whole vegetable
“ creation was sinking into repose, to
“ spring again more fresh and beautiful
“ in a few months: but it is not so
“ with the children of men.—The hap-

“ piest mortal must feel the weight of
 “ years and its attendant infirmities;
 “ the rich man is loth to quit his pos-
 “ sessions at a time when we should
 “ imagine he would be glad to repose
 “ in the arms of death, with the hopes
 “ of attaining a state where joy and
 “ peace endure for ever. Then why
 “ did not I remain at Thrapston; why
 “ not give myself up to those who
 “ wished my death? Its pangs are ge-
 “ nerally of short duration; why then
 “ fly from what must happen? I might
 “ be called away by a fever, or an ac-
 “ cident: then why fly from man?

“ These reflections, however, could
 “ not eradicate the principles of self-
 “ preservation so strongly implanted in
 “ our nature.

“ We

“ We arrived at York much fatigued;
“ and I went immediately to the con-
“ vent. The next day I felt greater
“ regret than I thought it was possible
“ I could in a safe situation. The idea
“ of being immured between walls
“ caused very disagreeable sensations;
“ and I began to think a convent by no
“ means suited to my disposition.

“ The abbess received me with a
“ great deal of politeness; said, she had
“ received a letter from sir William
“ Coniers, which informed her of the
“ death of his mother, whom she had
“ always considered as a very selfish
“ woman, both in regard to her son
“ and the world in general; that she
“ could not deplore her death on that
“ account, but was happy in hearing
“ that she departed a true penitent.

“ The abbess seemed about seventy,
 “ was extremely grave and majestic,
 “ but had a kind of severity in her look
 “ which did not please me; yet she
 “ had at the same time a benignity of
 “ countenance, which those frequently
 “ acquire who have been long seques-
 “ tered from the world, and whose
 “ thoughts are intensely fixed upon a
 “ better; nor did the severity seem to
 “ proceed from ill temper, so much as
 “ from a consciousness of her station,
 “ which obliged her in the most trifling
 “ instances to enforce obedience. Her
 “ name was Howard. She asked me
 “ if I came as a novice or as a boarder.
 “ I answered, as a boarder who wanted
 “ an asylum and a protectress;—that I
 “ threw myself upon her benevolence
 “ for both, and that I was a pro-
 “ testant.—She looked extremely grave,
 “ and

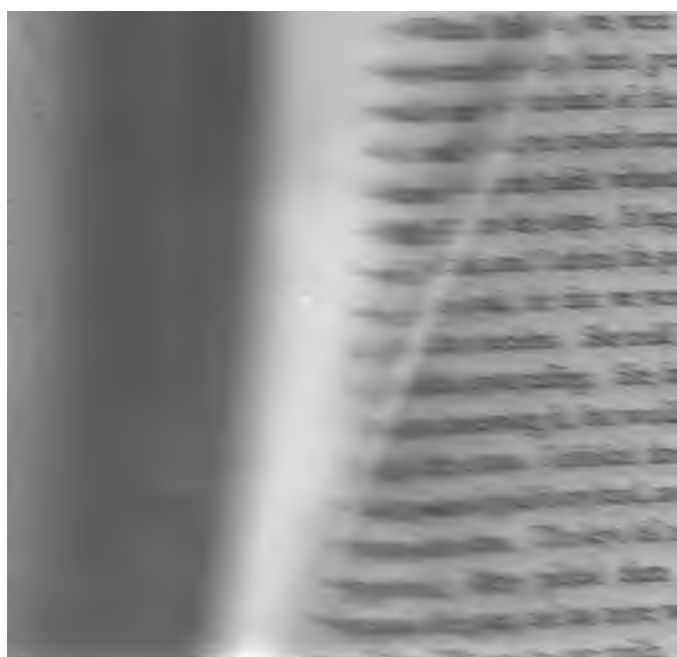
“ and said, that sir William Coniers had
“ not mentioned that circumstance.—
“ I told her, I was a persecuted being,
“ but not poor; that I was able to pay
“ what she should think proper for my-
“ self and attendant; and I wished to
“ have a separate apartment, except
“ at meals. She nodded assent.—
“ Though you are a protestant,” said
“ she, “ which is what I did not ex-
“ pect, yet you must wear the same
“ habit as the catholick young women
“ who are boarders.” I had no ob-
“ jection. “ You must attend mass re-
“ gularly, and not go beyond the walls
“ of the convent, nor receive any vi-
“ sitors, except in my parlour.” I
“ agreed. “ Have you a voice, or
“ any knowledge in musick?” I had
“ been taught musick as well as to
“ sing to the lute, and could accom-
“ pany, or sing to an accompaniment
“ at

“ at fight. She gave me her bene-
“ diction and was satisfied.

“ When I had been a recluse near
“ five years, the abbess was very earnest
“ with me to take the veil, which
“ I evaded as much as possible. I
“ know your story from your birth,
“ Matilda, and as a woman of honour
“ will give you my protection; but I
“ am old, and my time in this world
“ is short. Who may be my successor,
“ I know not; lord Montacute is a ca-
“ tholick, and the person who may fill
“ my chair may not be honest. You
“ may be privately and forcibly taken
“ from hence, and never more heard
“ of. Therefore, my daughter, embrace
“ our holy religion, and take the veil.
“ You will then be happy and safe
“ from persecution. I feel myself not
“ well; and, as you have conducted
“ yourself

“ yourself properly among us, I advise
“ you as a friend. This box of powder,
“ if ever you want to conceal yourself,
“ will effectually do it; after rubbing
“ it upon your face, it will be impossible
“ for you to be known; but at the same
“ time reflect upon the peace and in-
“ nocence of a monastick life. I will
“ converse further with you, my daugh-
“ ter, in three days.”

“ Two days elapsed; and, on the
“ evening of the second, I heard a great
“ bustle. Upon inquiring the cause,
“ they told me that the abbess was taken
“ extremely ill, and they were afraid
“ she was dying. In a moment I de-
“ termined to leave the convent. Mary,
“ my faithful Mary, I sent to the man
“ who had been our guide, to desire
“ him to procure three horses, and keep
“ them at his house till we came, which
“ would



“ tience for half an hour, he arrived ;
“ the horses seemed to be sorry hacks ;
“ but the man they belonged to assured
“ him, that they would travel for ever
“ if he gave them time. He asked
“ what road ; I said, south. We tra-
“ velled till five next morning, when
“ I alighted, and with Mary’s assist-
“ ance coloured my face. In three or
“ four days we arrived within twelve
“ miles of Coventry ; and seeing a
“ fine old house at a small distance
“ from the road in a delightful situa-
“ tion, we stopped ; and I told a woman
“ who appeared to be the mistress of
“ it, that I came out of the North for
“ my health, and should be glad if I
“ could have apartments, as I liked the
“ air and situation. It was inhabited
“ by a farmer and his wife, who said
“ there was plenty of room and old fur-
“ niture. I agreed with them ; they
“ hired

“ hired me a cook, and were to let me
“ have every thing I wanted that the
“ farm produced.

“ I now wrote to fir William Co-
“ niers and his lady, to whom I sent
“ my jewels by the guide, to turn them
“ into money; to send me books, or
“ any thing else that I might want, once
“ a year; and we were to correspond
“ as often as possible. The farmer and
“ his wife seemed good kind of people,
“ and I passed my time in their house
“ very happily. What tended to pro-
“ mote my felicity was, my being al-
“ ways alive to the beauties of nature;
“ the frosts, the snows, the refreshing
“ breezes of spring, the full summer and
“ plenteous autumn, had each their
“ several beauties. The farm-yard
“ scenery was also a constant source of
“ amusement and reflection; and I
“ taught

“ taught my good farmer and his wife
“ many things that I had observed at
“ Thrapston, and with which they were
“ before unacquainted.

“ Sitting one evening in the Gothic
“ porch, I asked my hostess, to whom
“ that house formerly belonged. She did
“ not know, but her husband did. He
“ came in, said, that he had heard a
“ long story concerning it, and would
“ rub up his memory to tell me. “ If
“ the business of the day is over, Mr.
“ Wright, will you and your wife go
“ into my apartment, and eat a bit of
“ supper? It will give me pleasure, and
“ then you can tell me the history of
“ this house.”—He would go with me
“ then. As we went along the passage,
“ he said, “ These arms belonged to
“ one of the owners.”—These,” I said,
“ are the arms of William de-la Pole,
“ duke

“ duke of Suffolk, and those belong to
 “ the family of Hastings.”—“ I think
 “ your guesses must be right, madam, as
 “ you shall hear by and by.” When
 “ we got into my apartment, “ Ah,”
 “ said he, “ I have heard my grandfa-
 “ ther say, that these were the rooms of
 “ state, for he was house-steward here.”
 “ Then sitting down, rubbing his fore-
 “ head with his left hand, and drawing
 “ his right once or twice across his
 “ mouth, he began :

“ I have heard say, that this place
 “ was built by William de la Pole, duke
 “ of Suffolk, and that he was a great
 “ favourite of a queen whose name
 “ was Margaret. She was not a very
 “ good one, but, like all the rest of
 “ the French, quite the other way ; and
 “ moreover it is said, that she was fond
 “ of the duke in no very honest man-
 “ ner ;

“ ner; but that is neither here nor
“ there as to my history.—Well, how
“ it came out of his hands I don’t
“ know, though some say he did not
“ come by his death fairly. The next
“ who was master was a lord Hastings,
“ who was cut off too; it then came to
“ his kinswoman, who lived here very
“ private; for her husband, sir Thomas
“ Grey, lost his life at Bosworth Field,
“ which place I know just as well as
“ I do this, having a sister living in
“ Bosworth town at this present time.
“ This lady Grey had a daughter, a
“ little child at that time, and my
“ grandfather came here a little boy as
“ page.”

“ Supper coming in, “ That’s well,”
“ he said; “ for somehow or other,
“ madam, my memory is rather muddy
“ to-night; but I hope your good
“ cheer

“cheer will brighten me up a little.” I frequently recommended the ale to him, and after supper a glass or two of sack; but he was now inclined to forget his story, when his wife reminded him of it.—“Well, I think madam, I left off at the page.” I nodded. “Well then, this lady Grey’s daughter was the fairest creature that ever was born, and had wooers from all parts of the country. Now she did not fancy any one of them at all, only a young knight of the name of—let me see.”—“Why, Chaloner,” said his wife. “Aye, Aye, sir Edward Chaloner. This gentleman was her favourite, which put all the rest to their wits end, except another young gentleman, a knight too, and his name was—what a head I have—”

—“Sir William Seymour,” said his wife.

“Are

“ Are you sure of that, my dear?” said
“ the farmer; “ for I should not like
“ to be out.”—“ To be sure I am, my
“ dear,” said his wife; “ have not I
“ heard you tell it, and tell it a hundred
“ times a year? but you are a bitter bad
“ one at people’s names.”—“ Well, fir
“ William swore that she should not
“ marry any body but himself; that if
“ any one dared make up to her in
“ the way of marriage, he would have
“ his heart’s blood. At last they
“ met in a park close by Deerhurst
“ wood, and there they fought, and
“ there they were found dead by the
“ young lady and her mother, who
“ had been sitting in a bower in the
“ wood. They found them just as they
“ had killed each other, and so the sweet
“ young lady went mad, and was mad
“ for a great many years. At last, one
“ day she got out, thinking nobody saw
“ her,

“ her, ran to the place where the young
“ knight had been killed, and jumped
“ into the lake hard by. My grand-
“ father was the only person who saw
“ her go in, and, though at some dis-
“ tance, made all the haste he could ;
“ he pulled her out, brought her home,
“ where they took great care of her,
“ and in three or four days she was just
“ as much in her senses as I am. She
“ lived some years after, though very
“ melancholy; never was seen to be
“ merry, but made her will, and left this
“ estate to sir Edward Chaloner’s bro-
“ ther, and it now belongs to his grand-
“ son. But the young lady, when she
“ did get her wits, had never the heart
“ to marry. Her tomb is now in our
“ church; and if you please, I will to-
“ morrow shew you the place where the
“ young knights had their battle.”

“ The

“ The next day, being Sunday, I
 “ walked with Mr. Wright to the spot
 “ where the knights fought and fell,
 “ and saw the wood where the heiress
 “ of Grey had been walking with her
 “ mother, the circle of trees which com-
 “ posed the bower, and the lake into
 “ which she plunged. I went to the
 “ church, and saw the tomb of “ Blanch
 “ Grey, who departed this life in the
 “ sixty-third year of her age.” If her
 “ head and heart were as much affected
 “ as had been represented, she must
 “ have spent many miserable years.

“ It was a great amusement to me to
 “ ramble about this spot. The wood and
 “ the lake render it interesting. The
 “ wood was very old, and many of the
 “ trees picturesque. It had been much
 “ neglected, which rather increased than
 “ lessened the beauty of the scene, and
 “ added much to the solemnity: two
 VOL. II. K “ young

“ young men dying upon the spot, a
“ beautiful woman frantic for the loss
“ of one of them, and the hospitable old
“ mansion, instead of resounding with
“ the cheering song of the minstrel,
“ silent, except when broken upon by
“ the long-drawn sigh and plaintive
“ voice of the lovely Maria’s mother.

“ In scenes like these, how often have
“ I wished for the talents of the poet
“ and painter, added to the wild genius
“ of Lawes to compose melodies, that
“ might record the melancholy tale !

“ When I had resided with the good
“ farmer and his wife three years, I
“ found that Mary had got a lover, but
“ would not marry without my appro-
“ bation. I could urge nothing against
“ it.—Farmer Hawthorn seemed to be
“ an honest man, and I gave them some
“ money,

“ money, with which they purchased
“ the little White Cottage. The situa-
“ tion pleased me, and I thought it would
“ be an amusement to repair and im-
“ prove it. I have now lived many
“ years a solitary being. Books, and
“ many other things, I have constantly
“ received from my friends the Coniers ;
“ our friendship will, I hope, ever re-
“ main, and yet we may never meet
“ here. The death of Mrs. Hawthorn
“ was a severe loss ; but my affection
“ for her I endeavoured to transfer to
“ her children, and have given them
“ some useful knowledge.

“ My will is inclosed in a small ca-
“ binet, with a letter to sir William
“ Coniers, and directions to the farmer
“ to convey those papers and my will to
“ him.

(Signed)

“ MATILDA DEVEREUX.

K 2

“ Written

“ Written by lady Matilda Devereux
“ after she went to Coombe Abbey.

“ So soon as my joy will permit, my
“ dear lady Harrington, I take up my
“ pen to write what I should be pre-
“ vented from saying, by an odd kind
“ of choaking in the throat, which is
“ very apt to spoil my eloquence ; this,
“ however, will I hope prove to you,
“ that notwithstanding youth has long
“ since left me, the buffets of the world
“ have not blunted my feelings.

“ Had I not been discovered by you,
“ I should soon have left my little habi-
“ tation. My friends sir William and
“ lady Coniers are now in Ireland, in-
“ specting their property, and visiting
“ their friends. When he had heard of
“ the death of lord Montacute, he would
“ have come for me himself. I must
“ leave

“ leave you, my dear lady Harrington;
“ but will take part of your family as
“ hostages for my return.

“ Adieu,

“ MATILDA DEVEREUX.”

“ So ends the history of lady Matilda
“ Devereux!” said captain Harrington,
as he laid the manuscript upon the table;
“ and I hope we shall soon see her
“ again.” — “ I hope so,” said lady
Harrington; “ but if they should not
“ return in a few weeks, and you shall
“ be sufficiently recovered, Elizabeth,
“ I think to join them in London.” —
“ The best scheme in the world,” said
the captain; “ and as my sister has only
“ one, two, three, not more, however,
“ than eight or nine beautiful marks
“ upon her face, I think she would have
“ no objection.” — “ But I think, Mr.
“ Captain,” said Elizabeth, “ that your

“superiors ought to be consulted before this scheme is put into execution.”—“Oh,” replied he, “I shall consult my colonel this very afternoon, by writing a letter and sending it post.”

In a few days a messenger arrived, and brought word, that lady Matilda would be obliged to go into Sussex, to take possession of her house and estate, late the property of lord Montacute.

In the evening came farmer Hawthorn to inform them, that a gentleman was come to inquire after the person whom they now called lady Matilda Devereux; that he did not know which way she was gone, though his daughter Jenny said she was gone for London; and that the gentleman said his name was Coniers. “Fly, John,” said lady Harrington, “and bring him to us.”

In

In half an hour the captain returned and introduced sir William Coniers, who was received with great pleasure by lady Harrington. The story of the witch was circumstantially related; and he informed them, that previous to his going to Ireland he had many serious conversations with lord Montacute; that he had within the last ten years lost his two sons, who both died unmarried, and on that account lady Matilda was his natural heir; that sir William saw lord Montacute began to relent towards lady Matilda, and to feel that she was his relation. In that state, therefore, he thought it much better to sooth him; and he so far got the ascendancy, as to persuade him to go to the church where her mother was buried. There reading the inscription upon the monument, seeing upon it these words, "Cut off at the age of eighteen," and then,

"leaving an infant daughter to bewail
"her loss," it seemed to touch him
nearly. Sir William then had the
coffin opened, and the parchment which
sir John Markham deposited there
read, which proved too much for the
old lord's feelings. He cried like a
child; in which frame of mind sir Wil-
liam left him, and set out with his
family for Ireland. On his return he
met a messenger, who informed him of
lord Montacute's death. Lady Coniers
and her family were gone forward to
Suffex, and sir Wiliam had come to
Coombe in search of lady Matilda, who,
he was happy to find, had so many good
friends about her, and that she was
gone to take possession of her fortune.

The next morning he took a view
of the White Cottage, and followed
lady Coniers.

Lady

Lady Harrington in a few weeks set out for London; but finding the party had left it, they followed them into Suffex, and reached the noble old mansion of the Brownes, of which lady Matilda was now mistress, and were received by her with all the joy that friendship could inspire.

Lady Harrington one day said to her friend, "I wish, my dear lady Matilda, that this whimsical old lord had not left you this magnificent place, for then we might have had some chance of your living with us at the Abbey." — "I should have been extremely happy with you," returned lady Matilda; "but as the man did take the whim into his head, I will certainly end my days here. This spot, my dear friend, was the birth-place of my ancestors. My grandfather, I have heard, was a very gallant sea-officer, who fought and died nobly in defence of his

K 5

" country.

“ country. His memory will always
 “ be particularly dear to me, because
 “ he was loyal, brave, and poor; and I
 “ am assured that he was providentially
 “ laid upon the bed of honour (he died
 “ with his sword in his hand, which is
 “ certainly honourable), when I reflect
 “ what a high-spirited man must feel
 “ at being neglected by his relations for
 “ marrying a woman of small fortune,
 “ when his own was not larger. With
 “ my mother’s story you are well ac-
 “ quainted; and happy was it for her
 “ that she left this troublesome world
 “ so young; for why should we be
 “ afraid of dying, “ seeing that death,
 “ a necessary end, will come when it
 “ will come?” and here, my dear lady
 “ Harrington, I intend my old bones
 “ shall lie. Your charming family, the
 “ Coniers, and as many as I can enjoy,
 “ I will see; but I hate the flattery of
 “ unmeaning people, and do not like to
 “ be

“ be perpetually in company. No,
“ the remainder of my life shall be
“ spent in what I call an elegant retire-
“ ment. To-morrow I will settle my
“ affairs with you, then all my other
“ worldly concerns, and I shall after-
“ wards have nothing to do but to pre-
“ pare myself for a better world, exer-
“ cise my benevolence among my poor
“ neighbours, and amuse myself in my
“ own way, for I am now old and too
“ obstinate to be put out of it. Simple
“ amusements and simple pleasures are
“ the joy of our childhood, and the
“ comfort of declining age.—My farm
“ and my garden are objects which will
“ take up much of my leisure in the fine
“ season; and I trust my library and
“ work will employ me in bad weather.
“ Thus I intend to divide my time, till
“ amusement and life shall end together.”

The next day lady Matilda was resolved to settle her family affairs, and lady Harrington gave her up the title-deeds of her estate. "These," she said, taking them, "shall go to that good man, my father's relation, Mr. Devereux; I have more from lord Montacute than I can spend. Do not give me any money, lady Harrington, for I am well assured of your having been a faithful steward, and will take no account of it; but request it as a favour, that you will give it to your daughters, as a proof of my friendship to their mother."—"My dear madam, you are not aware what a sum you have to receive."—"Give it to your daughters, my dear lady Harrington; and if it were three times as much, I should rejoice: as they are upon the eve of marriage, permit me to add it to their fortunes."

"So

“ So soon as we arrive at the Abbey,
 “ lady Matilda, the weddings will take
 “ place ; and nothing could make me so
 “ happy as your accompanying us.” —
 “ If I can add to your happiness, it must
 “ give me pleasure ; therefore I attend
 “ you.”

They departed for the Abbey, accompanied by lady Lisle and her daughter, colonel Vere, and sir Henry Wingfield.

Bridget was determined, the day after their arrival, to step to farmer Hawthorn's, and carry a letter from his daughter, whom lady Matilda had left ill in Suffex. She had not got two hundred yards on her way through the park when she met with the head keeper.

“ Ah, Mr. Jones ! how do you do ?
 “ You know, Mr. Jones, that every
 “ body is going into the world except
 “ you and I.” — “ What, is the old wo-
 “ man,

“ man, the lady I mean, that lived in the
“ White Cottage, going to marry ?” —
“ Bless your heart, no,” said Bridget ;
“ but all our young gentry are, except
“ the captain. Well, we shall have fine
“ triumphing and frying of bread. As
“ for myself, I shall give up being wait-
“ ing-gentlewoman, and live upon my
“ means ; for by good housewifery I
“ have picked up enough to keep me
“ comfortably as long as I live.” —
“ Poh, never give it up ; why, you look
“ now as fit for your place as ever you
“ did, and in my mind as fresh as ever.”
A boy came up, and was telling the
keeper that he had marked off the fawns.
“ Well, child,” said Bridget, “ and
“ what if you have ? You should never
“ disturb your master when he is busy.”
“ Why, he *sent* me to come,” said
the boy, “ when I had marked them
“ that was to live ; or how should we
“ know when we be right ?” — “ Go,
“ go,” said the keeper, “ I will give
“ farther

“ farther orders by and by.” — “ It is
“ very lonely walking across the park,”
said Bridget ; “ these great trees look so
“ melancholy to me who have been in
“ London ; but I must go and carry
“ farmer Hawthorn a letter from his
“ daughter Sally.” — “ How does that
“ pretty cherry-checked girl do ?” —
“ Why, she has not one farthing’s worth
“ of beauty about her.” — “ Well,” he
“ said, “ there may be others as clever
“ as she ; nay, I know those that I should
“ like better in the way of marriage ;
“ but she is a smart lass for all that.” —
“ Yes, but you can’t think what an ex-
“ cellent place she has with lady Ma-
“ tilda. Sally would not leave her to
“ be a queen.” — “ She won’t have the
“ trial of that, Mrs. Bridget ; but if
“ you are so melancholy, shall I walk
“ with you ?” — “ Yes, if you please ;
“ for ’tis very *lonesome* going by one’s
“ self.”

The

The farmer gave them some cakes and a jug of ale, and they set out on their way home in good spirits. "I have a thought just come into my head," said the keeper. "I think you and I would make an excellent match; if the rich folks marry, why may not poor ones?" — "Not so poor neither," said Bridget. He did not suppose she was; but they could not put themselves upon a par with lords and ladies. — No, no, to be sure. — He had bought a little place worth five pounds a year, from the savings of a good many years hard labour; yet he was young enough and strong enough to be keeper twenty or thirty years longer; aye, or forty; indeed, he could not say how long, for he felt himself quite hale and hearty. "Now what do you say to it? come, don't be long considering; for once before, fifteen years ago, a wife slipped through my fingers when I thought myself sure of her." — "Ah!" said Bridget, "how was it?" —
"Why

“ Why, when the day came, which she
“ had appointed herself, I put on my best
“ clothes, with the ring and every thing
“ in my pocket, and walked four miles
“ to her father’s house ; but on my go-
“ ing up to her, she looked at me as
“ grim as a cat, and told me that I was
“ too late, for she had married a gentle-
“ man’s butler.” — “ And what did you
“ do ?” — “ Why, I went into a mortal
“ passion ; the house was full of folks,
“ and they all laughed ; however, I al-
“ most broke his bones, (the fellow that
“ married her I mean,) came home with
“ my clothes spoiled, and went to bed,
“ where I lay three or four days sulky.
“ At last I got the better of it, and
“ whistled and went about my business
“ as usual ; but I could not get it out of
“ my head for a long time.” — “ It
“ must be a sad thing to be crossed in
“ love,” said Bridget. Aye, he said,
so it must ; but this could not be called
crossed

crossed in love, it was only crossed in marriage, for sure enough if the girl had died with a broken heart he must have died too; as it was, he was only in a passion, and could have flayed them all alive. After a great deal of conversation concerning the settlement of their goods, they agreed to marry, and to have every thing written down in *black and white*.

In the evening, Bridget communicated this momentous affair to her young ladies, who had no objection, and promised her their patronage. She then talked of having every thing settled under *bis* hand upon paper, or no going to church for her; *safe bind safe find*, and both gentle and simple should make the best bargain they could. "Why, you talk of bargaining," said Matilda, "as if you were buying and selling sheep, and not as if you were to pass your life with a faithful friend." — As to that, she had heard that folks were not
always

always friends when they had married; and as for being faithful, she would trust a dog for that before any man in England. She then confessed that she was forty-nine last April; but she should not care who knew her age when once she was safe in the park-house. She then left the room in perfect good-humour with herself and all the world.

“Happy creatures that we are!” said Miss Harrington. “Bridget’s consequence has ever appeared to me to arise from her looking ten years younger than she really is.” — “It matters not,” replied her sisters; “for mankind in general are a vain-glorious race; and if a duchess be fond of her elegant form, why should not Bridget pique herself upon her strong white teeth, and her round plump jovial-looking face? Is it not as natural and quite as sensible? We are all alike, my dear sister, however
“different

“different our situations in life ; and we
 “have all something to wish for, some-
 “thing to be proud of, and something
 “to regret.”

“And what have you to regret ?” said
 Matilda. “The dear delightful days
 “of childhood, which *I hope* at the same
 “time may never return ; but I will not
 “anticipate evils, and so, good night !”

The lawyers at last sent down the set-
 tlements, which were signed, sealed, and
 delivered, in due form. Mrs. Bridget’s
 were signed in her way ; she received
 the old wardrobe, a cow to keep in the
 park, and many other presents, which
 were very agreeable to her.

They all went to the parish church,
 where the ceremony was performed by
 the good Mr. Butler. Lord Harrington
 gave away his son and his daughters. The
 captain

captain presented Mrs. Bridget to Mr. Jones the park-keeper. Great hospitality and good-humour reigned at the Abbey for some time, after which lady Matilda went to her old mansion in Suffex, to gladden the poor ; lady Lisle, with her son and daughter, to her jointure-house ; colonel Vere and his bride to lord Oxford's ; and sir Henry Wingfield carried the elegant Matilda to his seat in Suffolk. Lord and lady Harrington remained quietly at the Abbey, diffusing blessings around them ; the captain was occasionally with them and with his regiment.

History farther informs us, that the above-mentioned personages were as happy as it is possible for human creatures to be ; that they gradually sunk into their peaceful graves ; and, as is generally the case, many of their great-grandsons and great-grand-daughters are living at this day.

THE AUTHOR'S APOLOGY.

I AM under terrible apprehensions, courteous and indulgent Reader, that you are not pleased with my work on many accounts.

First, it contains, I am afraid, too many serious common-place reflections.

Secondly, the horribly grand is not sufficiently worked up to make your hair stand on end, your flesh creep upon your bones, or your eye-balls start from their sockets ; all which, I suppose, are very agreeable sensations ; I suppose this, I say, because I never had the felicity of feeling them.

Thirdly,

Thirdly, I am apprehensive that there is not love enough; such as conversations upon that subject which might enliven or depress the spirits for four or five hundred pages together, and at last leave the fair tender-hearted reader in tears. If I could have succeeded in the pathetic, however fertile my imagination and tender my feelings may be, yet I never could have written them; for know, gentle compassionate Lady, that I wear spectacles. I must have taken them off, pulled my cambric handkerchief out of my pocket, and wiped the tears from them every two minutes. Under such circumstances, the work would never have been accomplished.

Fourthly, if I had ever seen a ghost, or any thing like one, you should have had it. But not having a proper idea
of

of one, I should have made, at best, but an unnatural thing of it.

Fifthly, the winding-up is very defective, as I have contrived no way in the world to marry lady Matilda Devereux and captain Harrington. In regard to the lady, it was entirely my own fault, being extremely partial to unmarried ladies, and knowing several at this time who are the most amiable women in the world.

As to captain Harrington, he declared publicly to all the world at the tournament, that Glory was his mistress. It would, therefore, ill have become me even to have wished that a gallant soldier should forfeit his honour by soliciting the fair hand of the fairest lady that ever lived in the finest country in Europe.

THE END.











